



**DELHI UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY**

302, H1-1-2 (Q4) (ARTS)



1.0094601

~~DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY SYSTEM~~

d. 1/1/89

Ac No . . . . .

Date of release of loan

This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below  
An overdue charge of 10 np will be charged for each day the book is kept  
overnight



INDIA AS DESCRIBED  
IN EARLY TEXTS  
OF BUDDHISM AND JAINISM

By

BIMALA CHURN LAW, M.A., B.L., Ph.D. (Cal.),  
D.Litt. (Lucknow)

Fellow, Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal, Royal Geographical Society of London; Honorary Correspondent, Archaeological Survey of India; Author,  
*A History of Pali Literature, Geography /*  
*of Early Buddhism, Some Kṣatriya*  
*Tribes of Ancient India, Ancient*  
*Mid-Indian Kṣatriya Tribes,*  
*Ancient Indian Tribes,*  
*Mahārīsa, etc., etc.*

*Thesis approved for the Degree of Doctor of Literature ..*  
*in the University of Lucknow*

LUZAC & CO.,  
GREAT RUSSELL STREET.

Printed by G. E. Bingham, Baptist Mission Press,  
41A Lower Circular Road, Calcutta.

## PREFACE

The present treatise consists of five chapters dealing with Geography, Kings and Peoples, Social Life and Economic Conditions, Religion, and Education and Learning of Jambudvīpa (India). It is based on the early texts of the Buddhists and Jains, written in Pāli and Ardha-Māgadhi. In my treatment, I have not ignored the evidence of Brahmanical literature, and wherever I have used it, I have done so with a view to clarify the relevant points. I have not failed to make use also of modern literature on the subject including my own publications. The sources utilised have been properly mentioned in the body as well as in the footnotes.

I have endeavoured to draw a picture of India with special reference to her peoples. The scheme adopted by me is in many respects different from that followed by Rhys Davids in his *Buddhist India*, and the treatment even of common topics is fuller in the sense that I have along taken into account the collateral evidence of the Jain *Āgama*. In Chapter I, a<sup>46</sup>, geography of India has been given in the help of a first-hand study of the textual evidences bearing upon

mountain and river systems and the location and extent of countries, cities, etc. The second chapter has been devoted to the kings and peoples who were the active factors in the make-up of the life and civilisation of ancient India. The third chapter deals with the social life and economic conditions. Here the treatment is novel as showing how all the sections of the people played their part as much as in social as in economic life. In the fourth chapter dealing with religion, the treatment may also be claimed as new in the sense that instead of taking religion as the source of inspiration for higher philosophy and ethics, I have sought to show how it was a living factor of ancient Indian civilisation. The last chapter treats of education and learning. Here my endeavour has been specially directed to the classification and description of various institutions and their founders, diverse movements and their promoters, together with the methods adopted and the results achieved. This kind of treatment, as far as my information goes, has not been attempted before.

The present treatise has been accepted as a thesis for the Degree of Doctor of Literature by the University of Lucknow.

BIMALA HURN LAW

## CHAPTER I

### GEOGRAPHY

The country which is now known to us as India was known, to all intents and purposes, to the Buddhists as Jambudvīpa and to the Jainas and the Brahmins as Bhāratavarṣa (Bharahavāsa). In the Purāṇas, Jambudvīpa is counted as one of the seven dvīpas or mythical continents into which the Earth, as then known or imagined, was divided. Bhāratavarṣa was just one of the nine varṣas or countries constituting the nine main divisions of Jambudvīpa. So far as the varṣa divisions of Jambudvīpa are concerned, the Jaina description of Jambudvīpa in the *Jambudīva-paññatti* and other works based upon it, is materially the same as found in the Purāṇas.<sup>1</sup> Thus with the Jainas and Brahmin writers Jambudvīpa as a continent was thought of as of much wider extension than Jambudvīpa as known to the Buddhists. In all earlier and later Buddhist texts and commentaries Jambudvīpa figures as one of the four mahā-dvīpas or great continents with Mt. Sineru (Sumeru) in the centre of them. The

---

*Matsya Purāṇa*, 114, 85. The *Jambudīva-paññatti* speaks of ten varṣas.

## 2 INDIA AS DESCRIBED IN EARLY TEXTS

Pubbavideha or Eastern continent is placed to the east of Sineru, the Aparagodāna or Aparagoyāna the Western continent to the west, the Uttarakuṇḍa or Northern continent to the north, and the Jambudvīpa or Southern continent to the south.

Even we are told that the land in Jambudvīpa where the people coming originally from Pubbavideha settled down, was named Videha after them; the land where the people coming from Aparagodāna settled down, became known by the name of Aparānta; and the land in which people from Uttarakuṇḍa settled down, became known under the name of Kuru.<sup>1</sup>

The Buddhist Sineru, also called Meru Suneru, Hemameru and Mahāmeru, is the highest conceivable mountain which formed the centre of the earth. In the sea, it is based to a depth of eighty-four thousand yojanas, and above the sea level, it rises to the same height. The Yugandhara, the Isadhara, the Karavika, the Sudassana, the Nemindhara, the Vinataka and Assakanna are the seven mountain ranges that surround it. On its summit is Tāvatimsa the Heaven of the Thirty-three gods, and at its foot is Asurabhavana, the domain of the demons. On its four sides are the four great continents.

## GEOGRAPHY

each containing several smaller ones.<sup>1</sup> The Buddhists as well as others in India treat Sineru as an emblem of long duration. Both its conception and description are semi-astronomical, semi-terrestrial, and, on the whole, mythical in their origin and character.

We get a slight realistic touch in the Purāṇas that locate the Sumeru mountain with its altitude of one hundred thousand yojanas at a central region of Ilāvṛtavarṣa, the country which, according to them, stands in the middle of the nine<sup>2</sup> varṣas of Jambudvīpa. To the south of Ilāvṛtavarṣa is the Niṣadha mountain range, and to the south of it is Harivarṣa, the country which lies just to the north of Bhāratavarṣa. In between the two is the Himalaya mountain with the Hemakūṭaparvata north of it. The Himalayan range extends east and west over a distance of about 1,600 yojanas. The topography of this range as it stands in relation to Bhāratavarṣa may be picturesquely represented by the shape of a bow with its string to the south (Himayān uttarapāṇasya kārmukasya yathā guṇah).<sup>3</sup> The *Jambudīrṇ-paṇḍatti*, which, like the Purāṇas, locates Harivarṣa to

<sup>1</sup> *Anquṭṭhara*, iv, p. 1001.; *Saṃantapāṇikā*, i, p. 419; *Visudhīmagga*, p. 206; *Parasuttھajotikā*, II, pp. 443, 485; *Dveṣṭitulāna*, p. 217.

<sup>2</sup> Seven, according to *Jambudīrṇ-paṇḍatti*.

<sup>3</sup> *Bhāgavata Purāṇa*, Dvīpavarṣa-varṇanā-sākāntika, Ch. viii.

#### 4 INDIA AS DESCRIBED IN EARLY TEXTS

the north of Bhāratavarsa and the Himalaya mountain, divides the Himalayan range into two, the Mahāhimavanta or Greater Himalayan and the Cullahimavanta or Lesser Himalayan. The former extends eastwards up to the eastern sea, i.e., the Bay of Bengal, and the latter westwards and then southwards up to the sea below the Varṣadhara mountain, i.e., the Arabian sea.<sup>1</sup>

The topographical outline of India to the south of the Himalayas is sought to be pictured in the Pali *Mahāgovinda-sutta* in the shape of a bullock-cart with its face towards the south. Accordingly it is described as extended on the north.<sup>2</sup> The symbol suggested in the *Mārκandeya Purāṇa* for visualisation of the surface of India is one of the convex shape of the upper shell of a tortoise (*kūrmapr̥ṣṭha*).<sup>3</sup> It is obviously a very correct picture of the thing, inasmuch as all the rivers of India either flow eastwards into the Bay of Bengal or flow westwards into the Arabian sea. Further, according to the *Jambudīva-pannatti*, the Vaitādhyā (Vindhya ?) mountain range divides

<sup>1</sup> *Jambudīva-pannatti*, i, 9: Bharatē pāmamp vāse... Culla-himavantassa vāseharapavvayasse dāhiṇenamp dāhiṇalavana-samuddassa uttarenam, puratthimalavaṇasamuddasse paccatthime-nam... The same extension of the range is implied in the *Malinda*, p. 114.

<sup>2</sup> *Dīgha*, II, p. 235: uttarena āyatam, dakkhiṇena sakata-mukham.

<sup>3</sup> *Mārκandeya Purāṇa*, Chaps. 57 and 58.

India into two halves, the northern half (*uttarārdha*), later called *Āryāvarta*, and the southern half (*dakṣinārdha*), later called *Dākṣinātya* or *Deccan*.<sup>1</sup>

The Himalaya mountain is known in Pali by such names as *Himavā*, *Himācala*, and *Himavanta*. It is one of the seven mountain ranges that surround *Gandhamādana*.<sup>2</sup> According to traditional description, it extends over a distance of three hundred thousand *yojanas* (leagues),<sup>3</sup> and contains eighty-four thousand peaks (*kūṭas*), the highest of them being five hundred leagues.<sup>4</sup> Here the length, the number and the altitude given are all evidently fabulous. We have mention of seven great Himalayan lakes: *Anotatta*, *Kaṇṇamunḍa*, *Rathakāra*, *Chaddanta*, *Kuṇāla*, *Mandākini* and *Sihappapātaka*, that are never heated by the sun.<sup>5</sup> Each of them is fifty leagues in length, breadth and depth.<sup>6</sup> Their names are such as to defy all attempts at a correct identification, and the description of their length, breadth and depth is too symmetrical to inspire confidence. The *Kuṇāla*

<sup>1</sup> *Jambudīva-paññatti*, i, 12: *Bharāhe vāse Veyaddhe nāmam pavvaye paññatte: uttarārdha-Bharahavāsassa dāhiṇepam dāhiṇa-bharahavāsassa uttareṇam.*

<sup>2</sup> *Paramatthajotikā*, II, p. 66; Malalasekera, *Dict. of Pali Proper Names*, ii, p. 1325.

<sup>3</sup> *Paramatthajotikā*, II, p. 224.

<sup>4</sup>, <sup>5</sup> *Anguttara*, iv, p. 101; *Manorathapūraṇī*, ii, p. 103; *Paramatthajotikā*, II, p. 443.

Jātaka mentions by name Maṇipabbata, Hīngulapabbata, Añjanapabbata, Sānupabbata, and Phaṭikapabbata among the Himalayan peaks,<sup>1</sup> none of which can now be satisfactorily identified. The *Sutta-nipāta* commentary speaks of some five hundred rivers,<sup>2</sup> only ten of which were to be reckoned, according to the *Milinda*,<sup>3</sup> the rest having an intermittent periodical flow. Of the ten rivers,<sup>4</sup> the first five, Gaṅgā, Yamunā, Aciravatī, Sarabhū and Mahī that were honoured as the five great rivers (pañca mahānadiyo)<sup>5</sup> constituted the Ganges group, and the rest, Sindhu, Sarassatī, Vettavatī, Vitamsā and Candabhāgā, with the exception of the second, constituted the Sindhu group. Broadly speaking, the first five flowed from the Jaina Mahāhimavanta, and the other five from the Lesser range.

The Kuṇāla Jātaka draws our attention to two most delightful spots in the shape of rocky table-lands (silātala), one, called Suvaṇṇatala, on the east side of Himavanta, and the other, called Hīngulatala, on the west side, the latter being sixty leagues in extent.<sup>6</sup> Similarly the

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 415.

<sup>2</sup> *Paramathajotikā*, II, p. 497.

<sup>3</sup> *Milinda*, p. 114.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Mārkapādeya Purāṇa*, 57, 18–18

<sup>5</sup> *Aṅguttara*, iv, p. 101; *Vin.*, ii, p. 237; *Samyutta*, ii, p. 135; v, p. 401.

<sup>6</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 415.

*Milinda-pañha* mentions one Rakkhitatala or protected table-land in the Himalayan region.<sup>1</sup>

The Buddhists derive the name of the continent of Jambudvīpa from a Jambu tree, which stands as its *kalpavṛkṣa*, with its trunk fifteen yojanas in girth, outspreading branches fifty yojanas in length, shade one hundred yojanas in extent and height of one hundred yojanas,<sup>2</sup>—all too symmetrical and imaginary to be believed as correct: It is on account of this tree that the continent is also called Jambuvana<sup>3</sup> and Jambusāṅga.<sup>4</sup> The tree stands on a bank of the river Jambo (Jambu). The continent extends over a distance of ten thousand leagues, of which four thousand are covered by the seas, three thousand by the Himalayas, and three thousand only are inhabited by men.<sup>5</sup> It contained as many as 34,000 towns, large or small.<sup>6</sup> As Malalasekera points out, ‘this number is sometimes reduced to sixty thousand, forty thousand, or even twenty thousand, but never too less’.<sup>7</sup> A description in the *Anguttara-nikāya* would have us believe that trifling in number were the parks, groves,

<sup>1</sup> *Milinda*, p. 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Vinaya*, i, p. 30; *Samantapādādikā*, i, p. 119; *Paramatthajotikā*, II, p. 443; *Visuddhimaggā*, i, p. 205.

<sup>3</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. xvi.

<sup>4</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, verse 552; *Paramatthajotikā*, II, p. 121.

<sup>5</sup> *Paramatthajotikā*, II, p. 437.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, II, p. 59. Cf. *Jātaka*, iv, p. 84.

<sup>7</sup> Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, i, p. 941.

lakes, etc., in Jambudvīpa, while more numerous were the steep, precipitous places, unfordable rivers, inaccessible mountains, and the rest.<sup>1</sup>

In accordance with the description in the *Jambudīva-paññatti*, the Bhāratavarṣa which is situated to the south of the Himalayas and between the eastern and western seas, abounds in prickly stumps and thorns, uneven and inaccessible roads, hills and dales, fountains and springs, *khattās*, crevices, rivers and lakes, trees, creepers and shrubs, forests and grasses, thieves, *dimbas* and *damaras*, famines and bad times, religious sects, the poor and destitute, emergencies and epidemics, wicked persons, drought, diseases, iniquities and constant commotions. It appears from the north like a bedstead, and from the south, like a bow (*uttarāo paliampka-samthāna-samthie, dāhiṇāo dhanupittha-samthie*). By the two large rivers, Gaṅgā and Sindhu, and the Vaitādhyā mountain range it is divided into six portions (chabbhāga-pavibhatte). It is 526<sup>6</sup><sub>15</sub> leagues in extent.<sup>2</sup>

As for the number and location of the dvīpas, the Pali account may be shown to have followed the same tradition as that in the *Mahābhārata* which, too, speaks of just four great continents and locates them on four sides of the golden mountain of Meru or Sumeru. The continent

<sup>1</sup> *Angrītara*, i, p. 85; Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, i, p. 941.

<sup>2</sup> *Jambudīva-paññatti*, i, 9.

on the west side is, however, called Ketumāla instead of Aparagodāna, and that on the east side, Bhadrāśva instead of Pubbavideha. The continent on the north side is called Uttarakuru, precisely as in Pali.<sup>1</sup> To the north of Harivarṣa and in between the two mountain ranges of Nila (on the north) and Niṣadha (on the south) lie two other ranges, the eastern, called Mālyavat, and the western, called Gandhamādana. Encircling the space between them stands the Meru mountain.<sup>2</sup> As in Pali texts, the *Jambudīvapañnatti* and the Purāṇas, so in the Great Epic the name of Jambudvīpa is derived from a mighty Jambu tree, called Sudarśana, which, too, is located in a spot between the two ranges of Nila and Niṣadha.<sup>3</sup> The origin of the Jambu river is accounted for, exactly as in Pali texts, by an accumulated flow of the juice of rose-apples that grow on that Jambu tree.<sup>4</sup>

The *Mahābhārata* agrees with the *Jambudīvapañnatti* and the Purāṇas when it speaks of six varṣaparvatas in Jambudvīpa. These are: Himavān, Hemakūṭa, Niṣadha, Nila, Śveta and Śṛṅgavān, enumerated from south to north, each forming a long range from sea to sea or ocean to ocean.<sup>5</sup> Bhāraṭavarṣa is, of course, placed to

<sup>1</sup> *Mahābhārata*, Bhīṣmaparva, 6.12, 13; 7.13; 6.31; 7.13, 14.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, 6.9, 10.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, 7.19, 20.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, 7.22–26.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, 6.3–6.

the south of the first. It also speaks of seven divyagaṅgās or celestial rivers: Nalinī, Pāvani, Sarasvatī, Jambu, Sītā, Gaṅgā and Sindhu.<sup>1</sup> The origin of Gaṅgā is traced to a lake called Bindusara, which is situated in the middle of three peaks, Kailāsa, Maināka and Hiranyaśrīnga.<sup>2</sup> The *Jambudīva-pañnatti* connects the origin of Gaṅgā with a flow through the eastern outlet of a great lake in the Lesser Himalayan range, called Mahāpadmahrada, and that of Sindhu with a flow through its western outlet. It speaks of a similar lake in the Greater Himalayan range. The description of the lake with four *toranas* or outlets is akin to the Buddhist account of the lake Anotatta, to which it refers the origin of the five great rivers flowing eastwards. Anotatta, too, is like the Jaina Padmahrada, a lotus lake with four *mukhas* (outlets) on its four sides, from each of which flows a river. Beginning from the east, the outlets are called Sihamukha (the Lion face), Hatthimukha (the Elephant face), Assamukha (the Horse face), and Usabhamukha (the Bull face).<sup>3</sup> The four rivers that flow, according to the *Jambudīva-pañnatti*, from the four outlets of the Lotus lake are, Gaṅgā, Rohitā, Sindhu and Harikāntā.

<sup>1</sup> *Mahābhārata*, Bhīṣmaparva, 6.49, 50.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, 6.43, 44.

<sup>3</sup> *Papācasūlani*, ii, p. 586.     <sup>4</sup> *Jambudīva-pañnatti*, iv, 34, 35.

The long description in the Pali commentaries<sup>1</sup> of the origin of five rivers, Gaṅgā, Yamunā, Aciravatī, Sarabhū and Mahī from the Anotatta lake may be best summed up in the words of Dr. Malalasekera: the river which flows out through the south channel 'circles the lake three times under the name of Āvattagaṅgā, then as Kaṇha gaṅgā flows straight for sixty leagues along the surface of a rock, comes into violent contact with a vertical rock, and is thrown upwards as a column of water three *gāvulas* in circumference; this column, known as Ākāsa gaṅgā, flows through the air for sixty leagues, falls on to the rock Tiyaggala, excavating it to a depth of fifty leagues, thus forming a lake which is called Tiyaggala pokkharaṇī; then the river, under the name of Bahala gaṅgā, flows through a chasm in the rock for sixty leagues, then under the name of Ummaggagāṅgā,<sup>2</sup> through a tunnel for a further sixty leagues, and finally coming upon the oblique rock Vijjha, divides into five streams forming the five rivers'.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Papañcasūdant*, Sinhalese ed., II, p. 586; *Manorathapūraṇ*, II, pp. 759-60; *Paramatthajotikā*, II, pp. 437-9.

<sup>2</sup> The Ajivikas cherished a tradition of seven Gaṅgā which they knew as Gaṅgā, Mahāgaṅgā (perhaps, Gaṅgā proper), Svādhinagaṅgā, Mṛdugāṅgā, Lohitegaṅgā (evidently Lauhitya or Brahmaputra), Avantīgaṅgā (evidently Avanti), and Paramāvantīgaṅgā. Cf Rockhill, *Life of the Buddha*, p. 253.

<sup>3</sup> Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, I, pp. 783-34.

A similar account of the origin and course of Gaṅgā and Sindhu is presented in the *Jambudīva-pañnatti*. But what is really important in it is the suggestion that thousands of other rivers fall into the Ganges through which they enter the eastern sea,<sup>1</sup> not directly. The same as to the Indus.

The identification of the Pali Anotatta lake with the Bindusara in the *Mahābhārata* and the Mānas-sarovara of popular fame may be justified by the fact that, like the latter, the former is associated with Kclāsa or Kailāsa. In Pali commentaries it is said to be enclosed by five Himalayan peaks, known as Sudassanakūṭa, Citrakūṭa, Kālakūṭa, Gaudhamādāna and Kelāsa.<sup>2</sup>

In the *Jambudīva-pañnatti* we have mention of eight peaks (kūṭas) of the Greater Himalayan range, of eleven of the Lesser range, and of nine of the Vaitāḍhya range which divides India into two halves: Āryāvarta and Dāksinātya. The eight Mahāhimavanta kūṭas are Siddhāyatana, Mahāhimavadadhiṣṭhātr, Haimavatapati, Rohitanadisuri, Hṛisuri, Harikāptānadisuri, Harivarṣapati and Vaidūrya.<sup>3</sup> The eleven

<sup>1</sup> *Jambudīva-pañnatti*, iv, 34: puratthābhimuhi āvattāsamāpi coddasahim salilasahashehi samaggā alie jagairā dālaittā puratthim-enāpi lavaṇasāṇuddar̥ samappei.

<sup>2</sup> *Pañcasūḍānti*, ii, p. 585; *Manorathapūraṇi*, ii, p. 759.

<sup>3</sup> *Jambudīva-pañnatti*, iv, 80.

connected with the Lesser range comprise Siddhāyatana, Kṣudrahimavadgiri, Kumāradeva, etc.<sup>1</sup> The list of nine peaks associated with the Vaitādhyā range begins with Siddhāyatana and ends in Tamisrāguhā.<sup>2</sup> The names are too ingeniously Jaina to be considered genuine and identifiable.

True that in it, precisely as in the *Mahābhārata*, and the *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa*, Bhāratavarṣa is described as a peninsula with seas on its three sides, east, south and west.<sup>3</sup> But is it not somewhat far-fetched to represent the topographical outline of the Deccan figuratively by the shape of a half-moon (*addhacamdasamīthāṇasamīthie*)? To the Buddhists, as we saw, Jambudvīpa is shaped like a bullock-cart with its face towards the south. In the Great Epic the shape is poetically conceived as one resembling, from south and north, a bended bow of which the string being pulled by the hand forms an apex at Dhanuśkoṭi, Rāmasetu or Rāmesvaram.<sup>4</sup> In the *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa* the shape of India, according to one description, is like that of a tortoise (*kūrma*) which lies outspread, with its face towards the east,<sup>5</sup> and,

<sup>1</sup> *Jambudvīpa-paññatti*, iv, 35.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, i, 12.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i, 10.

<sup>4</sup> *Mahābhārata*, Bhīṣmaparva, 6.38.

<sup>5</sup> *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa*, Chaps. 57-58.

according to another, like that of a peninsula with the Himalayan range stretching along on its north, like the string of a bow.<sup>1</sup> According to Hiuen Tsang, the north part is broad, the southern part narrow. As in the *Jambudīva-pañnatti*, he describes its shape as one like that of a half-moon.<sup>2</sup> All these images are suggestive, though only approximately accurate.

In agreement with the Great Epic<sup>3</sup> and the Purāṇas, the *Jambudīva-pañnatti* derives the name of Bhāratavarṣa from king Bharata whose sovereignty was established over it. It speaks of six divisions (*Uhedā, khandā*) in Northern India, and of three divisions in Southern, Eastern, Western and Middle. These are all internal divisions of India proper. The nine *bhedas* or parts of Varāhamihira conforming, as they do, to the centre and eight of the ten points of the compass: eastern, southern, western, northern, south-eastern, south-western, north-western and north-eastern (also suggested by the Jainas), are all internal. The nine *bhedas* or *khandas* mentioned in the *Mārkandeya Purāṇa* and the *Siddhāntasiromani* (iii, 41), and somewhat differently enumerated in the *Vāmana* and *Giruda Purāṇas* so as to count Kātāha and

<sup>1</sup> *Mārkandeya Purāṇa*, Chap. 57: Daksine parato hyasya pūrvena cha mahodadhiḥ Himavān uttaranāsyā kārmukasya yathā gunah.

<sup>2</sup> Beal, *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, i, p. 70.

<sup>3</sup> *Mārkandeya*, *Bhīṣmaparva*, iii, 41.

Simhala dvīpas among them, were all internal even as they were explained to Alberuni and Abul Fazl. But reading between the lines, one may find that the *Mārkuṇḍeya* description hardly leaves room for doubt that only the ninth of nine dvīpas constituting the Bhāratavarṣa, elsewhere called Kumāra, Kumāri or Kumārika, was the India proper.<sup>1</sup> The *Mārkuṇḍeya Purāṇa* gives it a length of one thousand yojanas from south to north.

Like Bhāratavarṣa in the *Jambudīva-pañnatī*,<sup>2</sup> Jambudvīpa in Pali texts is described as the kingdom of a king overlord (cakkavatti).<sup>3</sup> Accordingly Jambudvīpa finds mention in Pali as the continent over the whole of which the sovereignty (ekarajjābhisekam) of Dhammāsoka prevailed.<sup>4</sup> In Aśoka's own description Jambudvīpa, which was somewhat wider than his own kingdom (vijita), was certainly the whole of India where he succeeded in creating a sphere of righteousness. He gives it a length of six hundred leagues.<sup>5</sup>

As for countries and peoples (janapadā), the *Mārkuṇḍeya Purāṇa* introduces them, adopting

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Geographical Essays*, p. 120f.

<sup>2</sup> *Jambudīva-pañnatī*, iii, 41: Bharahe vā . . . Bharahe nāmarā  
rāyā cāuramta cakkavatti samuppajjithā.

<sup>3</sup> *Anguttara*, iv, p. 90: Cakkavatti ahūm rājā Jambusandassa  
issaro.

<sup>4</sup> *Samantapdāsādikā*, i, p. 41.

<sup>5</sup> M.R.E. and R.E. XIII.

the following system of classification: (1) those belonging to Madhyadeśa (Middle country); (2) those to Udīcya (Northern region); (3) those to Prācyā (Eastern India); (4) those to Dakṣināpatha or Dakṣinātya (Deccan); (5) those to Aparānta (Western India); (6) those to the Vindhya region (Vindhya or Vindhya-prsthā); and (7) those which are mountainous (parvatāśrayī).<sup>1</sup> These may be shown to have been a result of further systematisation from the *Mahābhārata*, Bhīṣmaparva, Ch. 9, in which the divisions Prācyā, Udīcya, Dakṣina, Aparānta and Pārvatīya are distinctly mentioned, and the remaining two are implied. The five traditional divisions of India, as met with in Hiuen Tsang's Si-yu-ki and the Bhuvanakoṣa of the Purāṇas are: as enumerated in the former—northern, southern, eastern, western and central<sup>2</sup>; and as in the latter—Madhyadeśa (Middle country), Udīcya (Northern), Prācyā (Eastern), Dakṣināpatha (Deccan) and Aparānta (Western).<sup>3</sup> Rājaśekhara, in his *Kāvya-mīmāṃsā*, offers the following description of them:

‘Tatra Bārāṇasyā parataḥ Pūrvadeśah  
Māhiṣmatyā parataḥ Dakṣināpathah  
Devasabhāyā parataḥ Pascāddesah  
Prthivudakāt parataḥ Uttarāpathah

<sup>1</sup> *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa*, Chap. 57.

<sup>2</sup> Beal, *Records*, i, p. 70; Cunningham, *Ancient Geography*, p. 136.

<sup>3</sup> *Treatise on Geography of Hiuen Tsang*.

Vinaśanaprayāgayoh Gaṅgā-Yamunayośca  
antaram Antaravedī.<sup>1</sup>

'To the east of Benares is the Eastern India. To the south of Māhiṣmatī is the Deccan. To the west of Devasabhā is the Western India. To the north (better, north-west) is the Northern (better, North-western) India. And the tract lying between Vinaśana and Prayāga and between the Ganges and the Jumna is the Inland (same as Midland or Middle country of other texts).'

Cunningham elucidates the geographical significance of Hiuen Tsang's 'Five Indies' in the following manner:

(1) Northern India comprises the Punjab proper including Kashmir and the adjoining hill States with the whole of eastern Afghanistan beyond the Indus and the present Cis-Sutlej States to the west of the Saraswati river;

(2) Western India, Sind and Western Rajputana with Cutch and Gujrat and a portion of the adjoining coast on the lower course of Narmadā river;

(3) Central India, the whole of the Gangetic provinces from Thaneswar to the head of the Delta and from the Himalayan mountains to the banks of the Narmadā;

(4) Eastern India, Assam and Bengal proper including the whole of the Gangetic Delta together with Sambalpur, Orissa and Ganjam; and

(5) Southern India, the whole of the peninsula from Nasik on the west and Ganjam on the east to Cape Comorin on the south including the modern districts of Berar and Telingana, Mahārāṣṭra and the Konkan with the separate States of Hyderabad, Mysore and Travancore or very nearly the whole of the peninsula to the south of the Narmadā and the Mahānadī rivers.

The broad divisions of India, met with in early Pali texts, are rather six than five. These are: (1) Majjhimadesa (i.e. Madhyadeśa or Middle Country);<sup>1</sup> (2) Hemavata or Himavanta (Himalayan region);<sup>2</sup> (3) Uttarāpatha (North-western region);<sup>3</sup> (4) Dakkhināpatha or Dakkhinā janapadā (i.e. Dākṣiṇātya or Deccan);<sup>4</sup> (5) Pubbanta (Eastern India); and (6) Aparānta (Western India).

The *Ānguttara Nikāya* mentions the following sixteen as Mahājanapadas among the countries

<sup>1</sup> *Vinaya*, i, p. 197; *Jātaka*, i, pp. 49–80.

<sup>2</sup> *Mahāvanssa*, xi, 41; generally called *Himavantepadesa* in several *Jātakas*.

<sup>3</sup> *Vinaya*, iii, p. 6; *Samantapādādikā*, i, p. 175; *Jātaka*, ii, p. 277, iv, 79; *Divyāvadāna*, p. 470; *Mahāvanssa*, iii, p. 303; *Petavatthu-āṭhakathā*, p. 100; *Theragāthā-āṭhakathā*, i, p. 339.

<sup>4</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, verse 976; *Vinaya*, i, pp. 195–6; ii, p. 298; *Jātaka*, iii, p. 463; v, p. 183; *Sumanigalavilāsini*, i, p. 265.

in Jambudvīpa: Kāśī, Kosala, Aṅga, Magadha, Vajjī, Malla, Cetī, Vāmsa, Kuru, Pañcāla, Maccha, Sūrasena, Assaka, Avanti, Gandhāra and Kamboja,<sup>1</sup> each named after the people who settled down there or colonised it. As noted by Dr. Malalasekera,<sup>2</sup> the first fourteen are included in the Majjhimadesa,<sup>3</sup> and the last two in Uttarāpatha. The *Dīgha Nikāya* gives a list of twelve only, omitting the last four, while the *Cullaniddesa* adds Kalinga to the list and substitutes Yona for the Gandhāra. The Jaina *Bhagavatī Sūtra* (otherwise called *Vyākhyā-prajñapti*) gives a somewhat different list of sixteen containing Aṅga, Banga (Vāṅga), Magadha, Malaya, Mālava, Accha, Vaccha (Pali Vāmsa), Koccha, Pāḍha (?), Lāḍha (Rāḍha), Bajjī (Pali Vajjī), Moli (Malla ?), Kāśī, Kosala, Avaha (?), and Sambhuttara (?).

A short description of each of the six divisions, as made out from Pali, taking along with it the principal kingdoms, cities, towns, rivers, peoples, etc., is found indispensable in the present chapter. To begin with—

I Middle country (Madhyadeśa): Madhyadeśa has been described in the *Dharmasūtra*

<sup>1</sup> *Ānguttara*, i, p. 213; iv, pp. 252, 256, 260.

<sup>2</sup> Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, ii, p. 494.

<sup>3</sup> According to *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa* (Chaps. 57, 82–85), the countries in Madhyadeśa were Matsya, Kuśula, Kulya, Kuntala, Kāśī, Kośala, Arvuda, Pulinda, Samaka, Vṛka and Gṛivaḍbanapura. It refers Avanti to Aparānta.

of Baudhāyana as lying to the east of the region where the river Sarasvatī disappears, to the west of the Black forest (Kālakavana),<sup>1</sup> to the north of the Pāripātra mountain and to the south of the Himalayas.<sup>2</sup> The eastern boundary excluded not only the country now known as Bengal but Behar which in ancient days included the whole of Magadhan country, the Buddhist land *par excellence*.

According to Manu, Madhyadeśa extends from the Himalayas in the north to the Vindhyas in the south and from Vinaśana (the place where the river Sarasvatī disappears) in the west to Prayāg in the east.<sup>3</sup> It is otherwise known as *Antaravedī* or Inland which extends up to Benares in the east.<sup>4</sup> The Buddhist writer would extend the boundary of Madhyadeśa farther towards the east so as to include Anga and Magadha. According to the *Mahāvagga*<sup>5</sup> of the *Vinaya Pitaka*, it extends in the east to the town of Kajaṅgala<sup>6</sup> beyond which was the city

<sup>1</sup> Cunningham, *Ancient Geography of India*, ii and xi, f.n. 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Baudhāyana*, i, 1, 2, 9, etc.

<sup>3</sup> *Manu*, ii, 21 'Humavad-vindhayonor madhye yat prāg vimaśanādapi pratyageva Prayāgā ca Madhyadeśah prakṛittitah'

<sup>4</sup> *Kāvya-mēmāṃsa*, p. 93 The same extension is implied also in the *Mānakandeya Purāna*.

<sup>5</sup> Vol. V, pp. 12-13.

<sup>6</sup> Identical with Ka chu-wen-kilo of Yuan Chwang which lay at a distance of above 400 li east from Campā (Bhagalpur). Cf. *Sumangalavṛddhi*, ii, 429, as to Kajaṅgala forming the eastern boundary of the Madhyadeśa. Also see *Jāt*, iii, 226-7; iv, 310.

of Mahāsāla; in the south-east, to the river Salalavatī (Sarāvati); in the south, to the town of Setakaṇṇika; in the west, to the Brahman district of Thūṇa;<sup>1</sup> and in the north, to the Usīradhvaja mountain.<sup>2</sup> The *Divyāvadāna* (pp. 21-22) extends its eastern boundary still farther so as to include Pundavardhana which in ancient times included Varendra (roughly identical with North Bengal). It is 300 yojanas in length, 250 yojanas in breadth and 900 yojanas in circuit.<sup>3</sup>

Thus it may be shown that the definition of the Middle country was not the same at all times and with all the authorities. In *Manu*, ii, 19, Kurukṣetra, Matsya, Pañcāla and Śurasena are included in Brahmarṣideśa, while the *Mārkanḍeya Purāṇa* includes them in Madhyadeśa. Manu's Middle country is a tract between Vinaśana and Prayāga, while in the above Purāṇa and the *Kāvya-mīmāṃsā* it extends so far east as to include Kāśī and Kośala. • The Pali list of six principal cities in the Mahāparinibbāna Suttanta (*Dīgha*, ii, p. 146): Campā, Rājagaha, Sāvatthī, Sāketa, Kosambi and Bārāṇasī, suggests an extension which included

<sup>1</sup> Consult Cunningham, *Ancient Geography of India*. Introd. xlvi, f.n. 2, as to the identification of Thūṇa with Sthānesvara: also see *Jdt.*, vi, 62.

<sup>2</sup> It may be said to be identical with Usraguri, a mountain to the north of Katikhal, *I.A.*, 1905, 179.

<sup>3</sup> *JRAS.*, 1904, p. 86.

Kāśī, Kośala and Vatsa in the west but excluded Avantī and Śurasena. These two countries have been expressly excluded in the *Vinaya Piṭaka* from the Middle country. Dr. Malalasekera has not cited any Pali authority justifying their inclusion in the Majjhimadesa.

The seven representative rivers of this division are enumerated in one list as Bāhukā (Bahukā),<sup>1</sup> Adhikakkā, Gayā, Sundarikā, Sarassatī, Payāgā and Bāhumatī, and in another list as Gaṅgā, Yamunā, Sarabhū, Sarassatī, Aciravatī, Mahī and Mahānadī.<sup>2</sup> The *Jātaka* mentions the Doṇa and Timbaru along with the Bāhukā and Gayā.<sup>3</sup> Here Bāhukā is evidently the same river as Vāhudā in the *Mahābhārata*,<sup>4</sup> which the *Mārkanḍeya Purāṇa* connects with the Himalayas along with Gaṅgā and Yamunā.<sup>5</sup> The Adhikakkā remains yet to be identified. The Gayā is no other than the Phalgu forming just a united flow of the Nerañjarā (Nairañjanā) of Buddhist fame and the Mahānadī (Mohānā of Brahmanical fame).<sup>6</sup> The Sundarikā was a sacred river in Kośala.<sup>7</sup> The Sarassatī is identified with the famous Sarasvatī which taking its rise in the Himalayas, disappears at

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 389.

<sup>2</sup> *Visuddhimrgga*, i, p. 10.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 388f.

<sup>4</sup> *Mahābhārata*, iii, 84.67.

<sup>5</sup> *Mārkanḍeya Purāṇa*, Chap. 57.

<sup>6</sup> Barua, *Gayā and Buddhagayā*, i, p. 87f.

Vīśālā. The Payāgā must have represented the confluence of the Gaṅgā and Yamunā at Prayāga (Allahabad).<sup>1</sup> The Gaṅgā and Yamunā do not need much comment. The Bhāgirathī Gaṅgā flowed through Pañchāla dividing it into Uttara (Northern) and Dakṣīṇā (Southern), Kampilla, the capital of the latter standing on its right bank. The Yamunā served as a boundary between Śūrasena and Kośala and further down, between Vamsa (Vatsa) and Kośala, Madhura, the capital of Śūrasena and Kosambi, the capital of Vamsa standing on its right bank. The Sarabhū is to be identified with the Sarayū in the *Rāmāyaṇa*, on the left bank of which stood and still stands Ayodhyā, the ancient capital of Kośala (Uttara Kośala). The Aciravatī is modern Rāpti on the right bank of which stood Sāvatthī (Srāvastī), the third or last capital of Kośala.<sup>2</sup> The Mahī (Mahāmahi Gaṅgā) is a tributary of the Ganges; a river of this name is associated in the *Mārkandeya Purāṇa* with the Pāripātra range.<sup>3</sup> The Bāhumati, Dōṇa and Timbaru are still to be identified.

The Jaina *Bhagavatī Sūtra* and the Pali *Manorathapūraṇī*<sup>4</sup> speak of a certain Mahāgaṅgā

<sup>1</sup> Barua, *op. cit.*, i, p. 87.

<sup>2</sup> Law, *Srāvasti in Indian Literature*, p. 9.

<sup>3</sup> *Mārkandeya Purāṇa*, Chap. 57.

<sup>4</sup> *Manorathapūraṇī* (Sinhalese ed.), ii, p. 761x.

which was either the confluence of the Nerañjarā and the Mahānadi or the river Soṇa.<sup>1</sup> To the east beyond Prayāga the united flow of the Gaṅgā and Yamunā bore the name of Gaṅgā. It is this Gaṅgā which formed a boundary between kingdoms of Kāśī and Magadha. Bārāṇasī, the capital of Kāśī, stood on its left bank. Further down it formed a boundary between Videha and Vesāli on the north and Magadha,<sup>2</sup> Aṅga and Kajaṅgala on the south, on the right bank of which stood and still stand Pāṭaliputra, the second or last capital of Magadha and Campā, the capital of Aṅga. In the early Pali texts we have mention of three other rivers in Madhyadeśa that were of minor importance: Anomā, Rohinī and Kakutthā. The first was a river thirty leagues to the east of Kapilavatthu<sup>3</sup> which obviously formed a boundary between the territory of the Śākyas and that of the Mallas. According to the *Lalitavistara*, however, the distance of the river from the Śākyā capital was six leagues only.<sup>4</sup> The second, Rohinī, was a small river which divided the Sakyan and Koliyan territories.<sup>5</sup> Cunningham identifies it with the modern Rowai

<sup>1</sup> *Manorathapūraṇī* (Sinhalese ed.), ii, p. 761f.

<sup>2</sup> *Majjhima-pi*, *Vatihūpamasutta*.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, i, p. 64f.; *Paramatthajotikā*, II, p. 382; Malalasekera p. cit., i, p. 102.

<sup>4</sup> *Lalitavistara*, ed. Lefmann.

<sup>5</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 412; *Paramatthajotikā*, II, p. 358.

or Rohwaini, a small stream which joins the Rapti at Gorakhpur.<sup>1</sup> According to Dhammadāpala, it flowed from north to south to the northwest of Rājagaha.<sup>2</sup> And the third, Kakutthā, was a river near Kusinārā<sup>3</sup> which appears to have formed, at one point at least, a boundary between the two Malla territories. Other rivers mentioned are: Campā, Kosiki, Migasammata, Hirañnavatī, Sappini, Sutanu, Salalavatī and Vettavatī. Of them, the Campā formed a boundary between Āṅga in the east and Magadha in the west.<sup>4</sup> It is probably the same river as one to the west of Campānagar and Nāthnagar in the suburb of the town of Bhagalpur. The Kosiki, modern Kuśi, is just a branch of the Ganges.<sup>5</sup> The Migasammata was a river which rising in the Himalayas flowed into the Ganges.<sup>6</sup> The Hirañnavatī is the Little Gandak and the same as Ajitavati near Kusinārā which flows through the district of Gorakhpur about eight miles west of the Great Gandak and falls into the Ghogrā (Sarayū). On the bank of it once stood the *Sal* forest of the Mallas of Kusinārā.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Arch. Surv. of India*, xii, p. 190f.

<sup>2</sup> *Therigāthā-affhakaṭhā*, i, p. 501; Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, ii, p. 762.

<sup>3</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, pp. 129, 134f.; *Udāna*, viii, 5.

<sup>4</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 454.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, v, pp. 2, 5, 6. The river is called Kosikā and Kosikāṅgā.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, vi, p. 72.

<sup>7</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 137.

The Sappinī, modern Pañcāna, was a small stream at Rājagaha.<sup>1</sup> Similarly Sutanu was a small stream at Sāvatthī<sup>2</sup> which must have fallen into the Aciravatī. The Salaṭavatī (Sarāvati in the *Divyāvadāna*, better Sarañavatī), probably modern Suvarṇarekhā, formed, as we saw, the south-east boundary of the Middle country. And the Vettavatī, modern Betwa in Bhopal, is an affluent of the Yamunā on the bank of which stood the city of Vetravatī, and farther south-west, stands Bhilsā or ancient Vidisā.<sup>3</sup>

As regards the hills, mention is frequently made of Gayāsīsa, the principal hill of Gayā,<sup>4</sup> which is the modern Brahmayoni and identical with what is called Gayaśira in the *Mahābhārata*<sup>5</sup> and Gayaśira in the *Purāṇas*.<sup>6</sup> The Pali commentaries account for the origin of its name by the striking resemblance of its shape with that of the head of an elephant (gajasīsa).<sup>7</sup> The *Mahābhārata* speaks of twenty-five hills of Gayā including the Gayaśira, but the early texts of Buddhism ignore all but the Gayāsīsa. The hills called Prāgbodhi by Hiuen Tsang<sup>8</sup> on the

<sup>1</sup> *Aniguttara*, ii, p. 29.

<sup>2</sup> *Saṃyutta*, v, p. 287.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 388.

<sup>4</sup> *Vinaya*, i, p. 34f.; ii, p. 199.

<sup>5</sup> *Mahābhārata*, iii, 95.9; Barua, *op. cit.*, i, p. 74.

<sup>6</sup> Barua, *op. cit.*, i, p. 68.

<sup>7</sup> *Sāratthappakāśinī*, iii, 4.

<sup>8</sup> Beal, *Buddhist Records*, ii, p. 114.

other side of the Gayā river are vaguely referred to but nowhere mentioned by name.

In the Barābar Hill-Cave inscriptions of Aśoka and Patañjali's *Mahābhāṣya*<sup>1</sup> we have mention of a set of hills under the name of Khalatika. The same finds mention in the *Mahābhārata*, the Hāthigumphā and two other inscriptions as Gorathagiri or Goradhagiri from which one could have a view of Rājagaha or Giribbaja,<sup>2</sup> the earlier capital of Magadha. This group of hills came to be designated in some of the mediæval inscriptions as Pravaragiri which has given rise to the modern name Barābar.

The Pali Isigili Sutta names the five hills surrounding the city of Rājagaha, taking them in the very order in which they stood to each other and beginning with Isigili: Isigili, Vebhāra, Pandava, Vepulla and Gijjhakūṭa.<sup>3</sup> In the Theragāthā, verse 41, the Vebhāra and Pandava are mentioned as two hills that stood side by side. The canonical order of the five names was changed in the commentaries, one of them enumerating them as Pandava, Gijjhakūṭa, Vebhāra, Isigili and Vepulla,<sup>4</sup> and another as Isigili, Vepulla, Vebhāra, Pandava and Gijjhakūṭa.<sup>5</sup> The *Mahābhārata* contains two lists, one

<sup>1</sup> *Mahābhāṣya*, i, 2.2.

<sup>2</sup> *Mahābhārata*, Sabhāparva, Ch. xx, v, 30.

<sup>3</sup> *Majjhima*, iii, p. 68f.

<sup>4</sup> *Paramattha-jotikā*, II, p. 382.

<sup>5</sup> *Vimānavatthu-āphakathā*, p. 82.

naming the five hills as Vaihāravipula, Vārāha, Vṛśabha, Rṣigiri and Subhacaityaka,<sup>1</sup> and the other as Pāṇḍara, Vipula, Vārāha, Caityaka and Mātaṅga.<sup>2</sup> A comparison of the two lists may show that Vipula is the same name as Vaihāravipula, Caityaka is identical with Subhacaityaka, and Vṛśabha and Mātaṅga are substituted respectively for Pāṇḍara (= Pali Pañdava) and Rṣigiri (= Pali Isigili), the name Vārāha being common to both the lists.<sup>3</sup> By the name Caityaka or Subhacaityaka may have been meant no other hill than the Buddhist Gijjhakūṭa or Grdhhrakūṭa.

The Jainas following a much later tradition of their own name locate the seven hills thus: 'If one enters Rajgir from the north, the hill which lies to the right is Vaibhāragiri; that which lies to the left is Vipulaparvata or Vipulagiri; the one which stands at right angles to the Vipula and runs southward parallel to the Vaibhāra is Ratnagiri; the one forming the eastern extension of the Ratnagiri is Chāthāgiri, and the hill that stands next to Chāthāgiri in continuation of Ratnagiri is Śailagiri. The one opposite to the Chāthāgiri is Udayagiri; that which lies to the south of Ratnagiri and the west of the Udaya is Sonagiri. The Vaibhāra-

<sup>1</sup> *Mahābhārata*, II, 21.2.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, II, 21.11.

<sup>3</sup> Law, *Rājāgrīha in Ancient Literature*, pp. 2f., 28f.

giri extends southward and westward ultimately to form the western entrance of Rajgir with the Sonagiri.<sup>1</sup>

A list of seven hills may be made out from the Pali texts with the addition of Kālaśilā, a black rock on a side of Isigili,<sup>2</sup> and that of Paṭibhānakūṭa, an echoing peak with a fearful precipice (*subhayānako papāto*) in the neighbourhood of Gijjhakūṭa,<sup>3</sup> to the traditional list of five. These very texts speak of Indakūṭa near Gijjhakūṭa and Vediyaka hill, identified by Cunningham with the Giriyak, the latter containing the famous cave, called Indasāla-guhā<sup>4</sup> (wrongly Sanskritised as Indraśaila-guhā). It may safely be maintained that the group of five Rajgir hills formed, as it now forms, the head, and the Vediyaka the tail of one and the same short range running from west to east over a distance of nine miles from Rajgir to the village of Giriyak or Giryek.

Among the five hills of Rājagaha all but the Isigili bore different names in different ages.<sup>5</sup> The Vepulla mountain, for instance, was known in a very remote age by the name of Pācīnavamsa and the people of the locality were then

<sup>1</sup> Law, *op. cit.*, p. 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, pp. 116-7.

<sup>3</sup> *Sampyutta*, v, p. 448.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 206.

<sup>5</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 263; *Sumaṅgalavilāsinī*, iii, p. 697.

<sup>6</sup> *Majjhima*, iii, p. 68f.

known as Tivaras. In the next stage the name of the hill was changed to Vaikaka, and that of the people to Rohitassas. In the third stage the hill received the name of Supassa and the people became known by the name of Suppiyas. It is in the fourth or last stage that the hill became known as Vepulla and the people by the name of Magadhas.<sup>1</sup>

With the Pi-pu-lo (Vipula, better, Vaihāravipula) hill 'to the west of the north gate of' Rājagaha Hiuen Tsang associated five hundred hot springs of which several scores, some cold, some tepid, remained at his time. The source of them was traced to the Anotatta lake.<sup>2</sup> In the Jaina *Vividhatīrthakalpa* the Vaibhāragiri is described as the sacred hill affording the possibility of the formation of kūḍas of tepid and cold water (*taptasilambukundāni*). The Pali and Epic traditions, too, speak of hot springs in connection with Rājagaha,<sup>3</sup> while Buddhaghosa definitely refers them to the Vebhāra hill.<sup>4</sup>

The Indasālaguhā in the Vedyaka hill was not the only cave in the Rajgir or Giryek range. The Rājagaha hills abounded in *guhās* and *kandarās*, caves and crevices, sufficient to offer accommodation, according to the Vinaya

<sup>1</sup> *Samyutta*, ii, p. 190f.; Law, *op. cit.*, p. 32.

<sup>2</sup> Watters, *Yuan Chwang*, ii, pp. 153-4.

<sup>3</sup> *Sāratthappakāśinti*, i, p. 38.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*

Cullavagga,<sup>1</sup> for five hundred brethren. Among the caves, those worthy of mention were the Pippali (or Pippali) and Sattapanni, both associated with the Vebhāra hill. Both of them were situated on the north side of this hill.<sup>2</sup> And among the crevices, those enjoying importance were these four: Kapota-kandarā, Gomata-kandarā, Tinduka-kandarā and Tapoda-kandarā.<sup>3</sup> The Pāsāṇaka-cetiya was a holy rock not far from Rājagaha.<sup>4</sup>

Besides these hills there were in the Middle country some natural forests (*svayamjātavaññā*) and some hill-tracts. The Kurujāngala, for instance, was a wild region in the Kuru realm which extended as far north as the Kāmyaka forest and which in all likelihood separated the Kuru realm from Pañcāla. According to one tradition, the kingdom of Uttarapañcāla was founded in this very jungle tract. The Pārileyyakavana was an elephant-forest at some distance from the city of Kosambi and on the way to Sāvatthī.<sup>5</sup> The Añjanavana at Sāketa, the Mahāvana at Vesālī and the Mahāvana at Kapilavatthu were natural forests. The latter Mahāvana lay in one stretch up to the foot of

<sup>1</sup> *Vinaya*, ii, p. 76.

<sup>2</sup> *Udāna*, i, 6; iii, 7; *Digha*, ii, p. 116f.

<sup>3</sup> *Udāna*, iv, 4; Law, *op. cit.*, p. 11.

<sup>4</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, verse 1013.

<sup>5</sup> *Samyutta*, iii, p. 95; *Vinaya*, i, p. 352; *Udāna*, iv,

the Himalayas.<sup>1</sup> The Lumbinīvana, a village in the time of Aśoka, situated on the bank of the Rohini on the Kapilavatthu side, was a similar forest.<sup>2</sup> The Nāgavana, an elephant-forest at Hatthigāma in the Vajjī realm,<sup>3</sup> the Sālavana of the Mallas at Kusinārā,<sup>4</sup> the Bhesakalāvana at Sunsumāragira in the realm of the Bhaggas,<sup>5</sup> the Simsapāvana at Kosambi,<sup>6</sup> the one to the north of Setavyā in Kosala,<sup>7</sup> the one near Ālavī<sup>8</sup> and the Pippalivana of the Moriyas<sup>9</sup> may be cited as other typical instances of natural forests. The Ālavī (Ardhamāgadhi, Ālabhī), identified by Cunningham and Hoernle with Newal or Nawal in Unaо district in U.P. and by Nandalal Dey with Aviwa, 27 miles north-east of Etwah,<sup>10</sup> was, as its name implies, a forest tract and formed a Yakṣa principality.<sup>11</sup> Similarly Kajan-gala, which lay to the east of Āṅga and extended from the Ganges in the north-east to the Salalavati or Suvarṇarekhā in the south-east, was an extensive hill-tract in the Mid-land. The

<sup>1</sup> *Sumanigalavilāśintī*, i, 309.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, i, p. 52f.; *Kathāvatihu*, pp. 97, 559; *Manorathapūraṇī*, i, p. 10.

<sup>3</sup> *Ānguttara*, iv, p. 213.

<sup>4</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 146f.

<sup>5</sup> Wrongly spelt *Sunsumāragiri*. *Majjhima*, i, p. 95; ii, p. 91, etc.

<sup>6</sup> *Samyutta*, v, p. 437.

<sup>7</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 316.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 164f.

<sup>9</sup> Law, *Geography of Early Buddhism*, p. 24.

<sup>10</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, pp. 160-1.

Viñjhātavi represented the forests surrounding the Vindhya range, through which lay the way from Pātaliputta to Tāmalitti.<sup>1</sup> According to Buddhaghosa, it was then a forest without any human habitation (*agāmakam araññam*).<sup>2</sup>

Over and above the natural forests and jungles there were hundreds and thousands of private and royal gardens and parks, and in some of the parks the deer, set at liberty, roamed about freely. The *migadāya* (*mrgadāva*) at Isipatana near Benares, the one at Maddakucchi in Rājagaha, and that at Bhesakalāvana were three among the notable deer-parks. Besides the tanks, large and small (*talāka-pokkharapī*) and wells (*kūpā, udapānā*), in which the Mid-land abounded, there were several natural pools (*jātasaras*) and lakes (*dahas*), though none of them were so very important as to find mention by name.

It may, perhaps, be safely premised that the realms visited by the Buddha were all included by the Buddhists in their Middle country. Such realms were Kuru and Pañchāla in the west and north-west, Vāmśa or Vatsa in the west and south-west, Kāsi and Kosala in the middle, the Sakya and Koliya in the north, the Vajji and Malla in the east and north-east, and Āṅga,

<sup>1</sup> *Mahāvamsa*, xix, 6; *Dīpavamsa*, xvi, 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Samantapāśādikā*, iii, p. 655.

Magadha and Kājāngala in the east and south-east. The Buddhist Mid-land may be shown to have constituted the upper Gangetic valley between the Himalayas in the north and the Vindhya (*Pali Viñjha*) range in the south. Within this area the Pali texts include a few other small tracts, such as the Rāmagāma of the Koliyas, the Pippalivana of the Moriyas, the Allakappa (*Ādrakalpa*) of the Bulis, Vethadipa the native land of the Brahmin Dōṇa, the realm of Bhaggas,<sup>1</sup> and the Kesaputta of the Kālāmas.<sup>2</sup> According to the Mahāgovinda Suttanta, Mahāgovinda, the Brahmin chaplain to king Renu, divided his empire into seven separate kingdoms with their respective capitals as named below:

1. Kalinga, capital Dantapura.
2. Assaka, capital Potana.
3. Avanti, capital Māhissati.
4. Sovīra, capital Roruka.
5. Videha, capital Mithilā.
6. Aṅga, capital Campā.
7. Kāsi, capital Bārāṇasi.<sup>3</sup>

Of these, the last three only were included in the Majjhimadesa.

Kururattha: The Kuru kingdom which extended from the Sarasvatī to the Ganges

<sup>1</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 184f.

<sup>2</sup> *Anguttara*, i, p. 188.

<sup>3</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 220f.

consisted of these three parts: Kurujāngala, the Kuru-land proper and Kurukṣetra.<sup>1</sup> According to Pali tradition, the people originally coming from Uttarakuru, colonised it, whence the name Kuru. In the *Mahābhārata* (i, 109.10) it is aptly called Dakṣinākuru, vying as it did with Uttarakuru in its glory, splendour, prosperity and righteousness. The Kurujāngala, as its name implies, was the jungle tract of the Kuru-land which extended as far as the Kāmyaka forest. There is a tradition to the effect that the kingdom of Uttarapāñcāla was founded in this very part of Kuru, in which case it must have stood on the left bank of the Bhāgirathi Gāṅgā. It is, therefore, not astonishing at all that in the Somanassa Jātaka Uttarapāñcāla finds mention as a city in the Kururattha.<sup>2</sup> The kingdom proper had Hastināpura for its capital,<sup>3</sup> Indapatta (Indraprastha) near modern Delhi, according to the Jātakas.<sup>4</sup> The kingdom was three hundred leagues in extent, and its capital seven hundred leagues in circumference.<sup>5</sup> The *Taittiriya Āraṇyaka* locates Kurukṣetra to the north of Khāṇḍava, to the south of the Tūrghna and to the east of the Parīṇa,<sup>6</sup> while the Great Epic definitely places it to the south

<sup>1</sup> *Mahābhārata*, i, 109.1.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 444.

<sup>3</sup> *Dvīyāvadāna*, p. 435.

<sup>4, 5</sup> *Jātaka*, v, pp. 57, 484, vi, p. 255.

<sup>6</sup> *Vedic Index*, i, p. 169f.

of the Sarasvatī and the north of the Dr̥ṣadvatī, between Taruntuka and Arantuka and between the lakes of Rāma and Macakruka.<sup>1</sup> In Pali we have mention of Kammāsadamma (also spelt, Kammāsadhamma),<sup>2</sup> and Thullakotṭhitā<sup>3</sup> as its two townships (*nigamā*). The Jātakas even speak of two townships by the name of Kammāsadhamma, one distinguished from the other as *mahā* from *cūla*.<sup>4</sup> The commentaries have their own ingenious explanation for the origin of the name of the first township.<sup>5</sup> But it should be noted that another spelling of its name is Kammāsadamma, a name which suggests that the place was a training ground of draught-horses. According to Buddhaghosa, the second township was called Thullakotṭhitā because its granaries were always full (*thulla-kotṭham, paripunṇa-kotṭhāgaram*).<sup>6</sup> The Jaina *Uttarādhyayana Sūtra* speaks of another ancient, wealthy, famous and beautiful town, named Isukāra after its ruler Isukāra ('the Arrow-maker').<sup>7</sup>

**Pañcāla:** This country was divided into two kingdoms: Uttarapañcāla and Dakkhinapañcāla,

<sup>1</sup> *Mahābhārata*, iii, 83.204.

<sup>2</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, pp. 55, 290; *Majjhima*, i, pp. 55, 501; *Saṃyutta*, ii, p. 92.

<sup>3</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, p. 54; *Manorathapūraṇi*, i, p. 144.

<sup>4</sup>, <sup>5</sup> *Jātaka*, v, pp. 35, 411.

<sup>6</sup> *Pāpañcasūdanī*, ii, p. 722. Cf. *Avadānaśataka*, ii, p. 118.

<sup>7</sup> *Uttarādhyayana*, xiv, 1; Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., p. 113.

the Bhāgirathī forming the dividing line between them.<sup>1</sup> The northern Pañcāla had its capital at Ahicchatra<sup>2</sup> (Adhicchatrā in Āśādhasena's inscriptions), identified with modern Ramnagar in the Bareilly district. According to the Somanassa Jātaka, its capital Uttarapañcāla bore the same name as the janapada.<sup>3</sup> The capital of Dakkhinapañcāla was Kampilla (Sk. Kāmpilya) which is identical with modern Kampil in the Farokhabad district. In the Kumbhakāra Jātaka, however, Kampilla, situated on the right bank of the Ganges, is wrongly described as the capital of Uttarapañcāla.<sup>4</sup>

**Vamsa (Vatsa):** This country, called Vatsabhūmi in the *Mahābhārata*,<sup>5</sup> was, as Hiuen Tsang knew it, about 6,000 *li* in circuit, and its capital, Kauśāmbī, about 30 *li*. 'It was a fertile country with a hot climate; it yielded much upland rice and sugarcane; its people were enterprising, fond of the arts, and cultivators of religious merit.'<sup>6</sup> In the *Lalitavistara*, however, its inhabitants are criticised as 'rude and rough' (prākṛtam cha

<sup>1</sup> Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, ii, p. 108.

<sup>2</sup> *Mahābhārata*, Ādi-parva, Ch. 140.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 444.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, p. 379.

<sup>5</sup> *Mahābhārata*, ii, 30.

<sup>6</sup> Watters, *op. cit.*, i, p. 366.

cāṇḍam cha).<sup>1</sup> The *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa* (viii, 14.3) places it, together with Uśinara, Kuru and Pañcāla in the Dhruvamadhyamā dik (i.e. Madhyadeśa). The *Ānguttara Nikāya* describes it as a land which was very rich and prosperous,<sup>2</sup> while the *Arthaśāstra* testifies to the high quality of its cotton fabrics.<sup>3</sup> Kauśāmbī which was all along its capital is rightly identified by Cunningham with the present village of Kosam on the right bank of the Yamunā. Even apart from retaining the name of Kosambi, Kosam is situated on a bank of the Yamunā as it should be according to Pali tradition. The present distance by road of about 100 miles from Benares to Kosam is the distance of 13 yojanas suggested by Fa Hien.<sup>4</sup> According to Hiuen Tsang, a way from Prayāga (Allahabad) to Kauśāmbī lay through a jungle and bare plains covering seven days' journey on foot.<sup>5</sup> Kosam is about 30 miles from Allahabad across the fields and 137 miles by road above the Yamunā. At a distance of about 2½ miles north-east of Kosam is the village of Pabhosā where two caves were dedicated to the Kassapiyas by a king of Ahicchatra.

<sup>1</sup> *Lalitavistara*, ed. Lefmann, p. 21.

<sup>2</sup> *Ānguttara*, iv, pp. 252, 258, 260; *Manorathapūraṇa*, i, p. 306f.; Spence Hardy, *Manual of Buddhism*, p. 501.

<sup>3</sup> *Shāmasaṣṭri's Tr.*, p. 94.

<sup>4</sup> Watters, *op. cit.*, i, p. 367.

<sup>5</sup> Watters, *op. cit.*, i, p. 368.

In a modern Jaina dedicatory inscription the hill of Pabhosā is placed just outside the town of Kauśāmbī (Kauśāmbī-nagarabāhya-Prabhā-sācalopari). At Kosambi were two famous gardens known as Ghositārāma and Pāvārikambavana.<sup>1</sup>

There was a reserve-forest of Pārileyyaka in Vatsa (rather in Ceti) the way to which from Kosambi lay through the village of Bālakalona-kāra and Pācīnavamsadāya. Pārileyyaka itself stood on a road from Kosambi to Sāvatthī.<sup>2</sup>

The Vinaya Cullavagga (xii) records a journey on foot from Kosambi to Ahogaṅga (Adhogaṅga) hill, from there to Soreyya, from Soreyya to Samkassa (Samkissa), from there to Kanṇakujja (Kanauj), from Kanṇakujja to Udumbara, from there to Aggalapura, and from Aggalapura to Sahajāti up to which the country-boats could ply. The Vinaya Piṭaka (iii, p. 1f.) records also similar journey from Veranījā to Benares via Soreyya, Samkassa and Kanṇakujja after crossing the Ganges at Payāgapatiṭṭhāna.

Bhagga: This was the land of the Bhaggas (Bhargas) which became a dependency of Vatsa with Sumsumāragira as its chief town.<sup>3</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> *Vinaya*, i, p. 337f.; *Majjhima*, i, p. 320; *Dīgha*, ii, p. 81.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 352f.; *Samyutta*, iii, p. 95; *Udāna*, iv, 5; *Majjhima*, i, p. 320; *Jātaka*, iii, p. 489, etc.

<sup>3</sup> *Majjhima*, i, p. 332; *Ānguttara*, ii, p. 61; vi, p. 85; *Vinaya*, ii, p. 127.

name of its capital is generally spelt as Sumsumāragiri. But Buddhaghosa expressly says that the city was called Sumsumāragira on account of the fact that while it was being founded, the shriek of a sumsumāra (crocodile) was heard.<sup>1</sup> If the spelling giri be correct, the city must have been built either round or in the vicinity of the Sumsumāra hill. The location of Bhagga is not as yet settled, though Dr. Malalasekera places it between Vesāli and Sāvatthī<sup>2</sup> without citing any evidence for it. In the *Mahābhārata*,<sup>3</sup> too, the Bharga State is associated with Vatsa. In the *Apadāna*, Bhagga is mentioned along with Karusa (Karūsa),<sup>4</sup> which latter is referred in the *Mārkandeya Purāṇa* to a neighbourhood of the Vindhya range.<sup>5</sup>

Cetirattha: The country of the Cetis or Cedis lay near the Yamunā, contiguous to that of the Kurus. It may approximately be identified with the modern Bundelkhand and adjoining region. In the Cetiya Jātaka Sotthivati,<sup>6</sup> probably identical with the Śukti or Śuktimatī of

<sup>1</sup> *Papañcasūdāni*, i, Sinhalese ed., p. 292.

<sup>2</sup> Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, ii, p. 345.

<sup>3</sup> *Mahābhārata*, ii, 30.10-11; Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, p. 159. Also *Harivamśa*, 29.73.

<sup>4</sup> *Apadāna*, ii, p. 359.

<sup>5</sup> *Mārkandeya Purāṇa*, Chap. 57.

<sup>6</sup> *Jātaka*, (Faustböll), iii, pp. 454-461.

the *Mahābhārata*,<sup>1</sup> is mentioned as its capital. Sahajāti<sup>2</sup> finds mention as a township of Ceti, which probably stood on the right bank of the Yamunā. Sahaficanika<sup>3</sup> appears to have been another township, but according to Dr. Malalasekera,<sup>4</sup> the name is evidently a wrong reading of Sahajāti. There was a Deer Park in the village of Pācinavamśa,<sup>5</sup> which, as its name implies, lay to the east of Vatsa, next to the village of Bālakalonakāra on the side of the Vatsa kingdom. The Vessantara Jātaka<sup>6</sup> mentions one Cetaratṭha, situated 30 yojanas from the Jetuttara-nagara, through which lay a way to the Himalayan region. This latter Ceti country is sometimes identified with the territory covered by the kingdom of Nepal.

Kāsi: This is one of the most ancient kingdoms in Northern India, with Bārāṇasī (modern Benares) as its capital, twelve yojanas in extent.<sup>7</sup> The city stood, as it now does, on the left bank of the Ganges, and it was known by different names in different ages: Surundhana, Sudassana, Brahmavaddhana, Pupphavati, Ramma and Molini.<sup>8</sup> In Pali texts it is predicted

<sup>1</sup> *Mahābhārata*, iii, 22350; xiv, 83.2.

<sup>2</sup> *Ānguttara*, iii, p. 355.

<sup>3</sup> *Samyutta*, v, p. 436f.

<sup>4</sup> Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, ii, p. 1080.

<sup>5</sup> *Ānguttara*, iv, p. 228f.

<sup>6</sup> *Jātaka*, vi, p. 514f.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, vi, p. 160.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, pp. 15, 119.

to be the future capital of Jambudvīpa. According to Brahmanical literature, the city derived its name from Asi and Baruṇā,<sup>1</sup> the two small streams bounding it on the south and the north respectively. The country was noted as a great centre of trade, most populous and prosperous at the same time. One high way connected it with Rājagaha<sup>2</sup> and another with Sāvatthī.<sup>3</sup> It was noted for its silk cloth<sup>4</sup> and for perfumes (Kāśī-vilepana, Kāśī-candana).<sup>5</sup> Vāsabhagāma, Macchikāṣaṇḍa, Kitāgiri and Dhanapālagāma are mentioned as notable places. Of them Kitāgiri was 'a very fertile tract with abundance of rain-water enabling it to yield three harvests of food-grains'.<sup>6</sup> Cundatthila (Cundavila) finds mention in the Petavatthu, iii, i, as a village near Benares but on the other side of the river (Baruṇā ?) and between Vāsabhagāma and Benares. A locality of this name finds mention in one of the Barhut inscriptions.<sup>7</sup> The most important place near Benares in the history of Buddhism is the Deer Park at Isipatana (Rśipatana, modern Sarnath) eighteen leagues from Uruvelā, the place of the Buddha's Enlightenment and three or four miles to the

<sup>1</sup> Cunningham, *op. cit.*, pp. 435-6.

<sup>2</sup> *Vinaya*, ii, p. 212.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 10.

<sup>4</sup> *Jātaka*, vi, p. 151.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 355; *Ānguttara*, iii, p. 391.

<sup>6</sup> Barua in *J.H.Q.*, x, p. 63.

<sup>7</sup> Parma and Simha. *Barhut Inscriptions*.

north of the present city of Benares. The old Deer Park still exists about five miles from Sarnath. The ancient city of Benares was a great centre of trade and industry and trade relations existed between it on one side and Sāvatthī and Takkasilā on the other.<sup>1</sup>

Kosala: A distinction is to be made between Kosala as a janapada and Kosala as an empire. The former was the Kosala proper. The latter comprised five territories including Kosala proper,<sup>2</sup> the remaining four being Kāsi with Benares as its capital, Ālabhī (Pali Ālavī) with its capital at Ālabhī, Uttarapañcāla having Kampillapura (better, Ahicchatra) for its capital, and another with Polāsapura as its capital.<sup>3</sup> Here we are concerned with the country of Kosala proper which was divided into Uttara and Dakkhīna, evidently by the Sarabhū (Sarayū) serving as a wedge between them. The *Rāmāyaṇa* and the *Vāyu Purāṇa* speak of two Kosalas, Northern and Southern, the former with Śrāvasti as its capital and the latter having Kuśāvatī for its capital, Ayodhyā (Pali Ayojhā) being the earlier capital of the undivided kingdom.<sup>4</sup> The *Rāmāyaṇa* locates Kuśāvatī, the

<sup>1</sup> *Dhammapada-āṭṭhakathā*, i, p. 123; iii, p. 429.

<sup>2</sup> *Saṃyutta*, i, p. 80, speaks of *pañcarājāno Paseñadi-pamukha* Cf. *Journal Asiatique*, Juillet—Sept., 1923,—Levi, S.—*Pre-Aryan et Pre-Dravidian dans l'Inde*.

<sup>3</sup> See *Uvāsaga-dasāo* discussed in Law's *Sṛdvaṇī*, p. 12.

<sup>4</sup> *Rāmāyaṇa*, vii, 120.7; 121.4-5; *Vāyu Purāṇa*, 88, 209.

capital of Dakṣiṇa-Kosala at the foot of the Vindhya range. This may have been precisely the city which under the name of Ayodhyā is associated in the *Jambudīva-pañnatti* with the Vaitādhya range along which there were sixty Vidyādhara towns (*satṭhim Vijjhāharanagaravāsā*),<sup>1</sup> referred to also in the Hāthigumphā inscription of Khāravela as *Vijādharādhivāsā*. Besides Ayojjhā and Sāvatthī, Sāketa, too, has been mentioned in some of the early Buddhist texts<sup>2</sup> as the capital of Kosala, the northern Kosala. Sāketa is said to have stood on a high road between Sāvatthī and Kosambi,<sup>3</sup> at a distance of seven relay drives of royal chariots (*satta-ratha-vinītāni*).<sup>4</sup> Sāvatthī was called Sāvatthī either because it was founded near the hermitage of the sage Savattha or because of its great prosperity as a city.<sup>5</sup> It stood on the right bank of the Aciravati (modern Rapti).<sup>6</sup> There is much to be said in favour of Dr. Barua's suggestion that the great trade-route from Rājagaha to Sāvatthī branched off into two roads, one the Dakkhināpatha or Southern (better, South-western) Road, and the

<sup>1</sup> *Jambudīva-pañnatti*, 1, 12.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, 11, p. 270; *Mahāvastu*, 1, p. 34.

<sup>3</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, verses 1011–1013.

<sup>4</sup> *Majjhima*, 1, p. 149.

<sup>5</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 5f

<sup>6</sup> Law, *Strāvasti*, p. 9.

other Uttarāpatha or Northern (better, North-western) Road, each lending its name to the region through which it lay.<sup>1</sup> Ukkatthā<sup>2</sup> was an important town in Kosala besides Sāvatthī and Sāketa, and Naṅgaraka,<sup>3</sup> a township bordering on the Sakya territory, Uṇumpa or Medalumpa being the adjoining township on the Sakya side. Setavyā on the high road between Kapilavatthu and Sāvatthī was the headquarters of a chieftain.<sup>4</sup> Among other towns, mention may be made of Daṇḍakappaka,<sup>5</sup> Nālakapāna<sup>6</sup> and Pañkadadhā.<sup>7</sup> The Pali texts speak of a few famous Brahmin villages, such as Manasākaṭa (probably the same as Manavasitikāda of the Soghraura plate), Ekasālā, Icchānaṅgala, Opasāda, Nagaravinda and Venāgapura.<sup>8</sup> As for other localities, these preserve the names of Toranavatthu on the road between Sāvatthī and Sāketa,<sup>9</sup> Palāsavana, a woodland at Nālakapāna, Cāḍalakappa,<sup>10</sup> and Nālandā.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Barua, *Old Brāhmī Inscriptions*.

<sup>2</sup> *Dīgha*, i, p. 81.

<sup>3</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, *Dhammadetiya Sutta*.

<sup>4</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, verses 36–38; *Dīgha*, ii, p. 316.

<sup>5</sup> *Āṅguttara*, iii, p. 402.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, v, p. 122.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 236.

<sup>8</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 4; Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, i, p. 696; Law, *Srāvasti*, p. 11.

<sup>9</sup> *Samyutta*, iv, p. 374.

<sup>10</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, p. 209.

<sup>11</sup> *Samyutta*, iv, p. 322.

At the south gate of Sāvatthī and within a distance of about two miles from it was the famous garden of Prince Jeta, at its east gate lay the site of the Pubbārāma built by Visākhā, and in its neighbourhood stood the Ekasālakatinduka grove of Queen Mallikā.<sup>1</sup> The Jaina Bhagavati Sūtra mentions the settlement of Saravaṇa as the birth-place of Gosāla.<sup>2</sup>

The Sundarikā, probably not far from Sāvatthī, was a sacred river in Kosala besides the Sarabhū and Aciravatī. The river Sadānīrā (modern Gaṇḍakī) formed a boundary in the east between Kosala and Videha.<sup>3</sup>

**Magadha:** The kingdom or country roughly corresponding to the modern Patna and Gayā districts of Behar was broadly divided into two *khettas*: Gayā and Magadha<sup>4</sup> from a religious, and may be also from a fiscal point of view. In the *Jambudīva-paññatti* the latter is distinctly called Māgahatitthakhetta. The Ganges formed a natural dividing line between Kāsi in the west and Magadha in the east, as well as between Magadha in the south and Videha

<sup>1</sup> *Sumangalavilāśinī*, ii, 365.

<sup>2</sup> Law, *Srāvasti*, p. 26.

<sup>3</sup> Law, *Srāvasti in Indian Literature*, p. 13.

<sup>4</sup> *Paramatīhajotikā*, II, p. 301: *Gayā nī gāmo pi titthāpi pi vuuccati; Therigāthā-apīhakathā*, p. 225: *Magadharattha Bodhimanda; Lalitavistara*, Mitra's Edition, XVII, 309: *Māgadhakānam Gayā; Paramatīhajotikā*, II, p. 583: *Magadhakhette pāsānakacetiye; Barua, Gayā and Buddhagaya*, i, p. 83f.

and Vesālī in the north. The river Campā (modern Chāndan) formed a boundary on the east side between Magadha and Āṅga. As for the two khettas of Gayā and Magadha, it may be said that Gorathagiri (Aśoka's khalatikapavata) affording a distant view, as it did of Rājagaha, stood just on the borderland of Magadha towards Gayā. The Gayā proper, the holiest place of ancient India, comprised three divisions, all located along the left bank of the Nerañjarā and the Gayā river (i.e. Phalgu): Uruvelā, Nadī (the meeting-place of the Nerañjarā and the Mahānadi), and Gayā. According to the *Mahābhārata*, the Gayā division contained twenty-five hills (enumerated in the *Vāyu Purāṇa*), of which the Gayāśira (modern Brahmayoni hill) was the main. As clearly implied in the *Gayāmāhātmya* the hills of Gayā formed the head of a very old range of hills with its navel at Yājpur in Orissa and southern extremity at Mahendragiri. The distance, by road from Gayā to Uruvelā (modern Bodhagayā) was three *gāvutas* (six or seven miles) then as now.<sup>1</sup> The Uruvelā division on the banks of the Nerañjarā contained Senānigāma or Senānigama (identified by Blöch with the present village of Urel) and Nala, the native village of Buddhaghosa, the great Pali commentator.

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Bodhumandato hi Gayā नून, Bārāṇasi अथरासा योजनानि

According to Hiuen Tsang, 'the Uruvelā of yore' extended north and east 14 or 15 *li* at least from a point near the base of the Gayāśīrṣa hill on the other side of the Phalgu. In its southern extension it was outskirted by an extensive jungle tract of Vaṅkahāra janapada (roughly identical with Hazaribagh district).<sup>1</sup> The way from Gayā to Benares lay through such localities as Aparagayā, Vaśalā, Cundadvolā, Lohitavastu, Gandhapura and Sārathipura on the right bank of the Ganges, opposite to the city of Benares.<sup>2</sup>

The earlier capital of Magadha was Rājagaha, also known as Giribaja. Hiuen Tsang knew it as Kuśāgrapura (*ku-she-ka-lu-pu-lo*), a name corresponding to Kuśāgrapura, met with in such late works as the *Mañjuśrīmūlakalpa* and *Jaina Vividhatīrthakalpa*.<sup>3</sup> According to the *Mahābhārata*, the city abounded in *lodhra* grass. Besides the five hills, the *guhās*, *kandaras*, *tapodas*, etc., already discussed in connection with Rājagaha, mention also may be made of the Corapapāta, the precipice down which the thieves were thrown, the Sappasondikapabbhāra, the tank called Sumāgadha, Moranivāpa, a feeding ground of the peafowls. The Latthivana (Yaśtivana) was either a bamboo-forest or palm-

<sup>1</sup> Barua, *Gayā and Buddhagayā*, i, p. 106.

<sup>2</sup> *Mahāvastu*, iii, p. 324f.; Barua, *op. cit.*, i, pp. 115-6.

<sup>3</sup> Law, *Rājāgrīha*, p. 1.

grove on a road between Rājagaha and Uruvelā.<sup>1</sup> Other localities of importance near about Rājagaha, a city provided with sixty-four gates,<sup>2</sup> the four of which were main, were Veluvana, the Bamboo-grove of Bimbisāra, Jīvaka's Mango-grove, the Royal pleasance at Ambalaṭṭhikā on the high road from Rājagaha to Vesālī, and Pāvārika's Mango-grove at Nālandā (identified with the present village of Burgaon). Ekanālā finds mention as a famous Brahmin village at Dakkhinagiri.<sup>3</sup> Nālaka was a village in Magadha. The Jaina *Bhagavatī Sūtra* speaks of a village by the name of Siddhatthagāma.<sup>4</sup> The Jainas lay the scene of Mahāvīra's demise at Pāvāpuri on the Bihar Sarif-Nawadah road. The village of Pāṭaligāma stood on the right bank of the Ganges, on the same high road, opposite Kotīgāma, a locality in an extremity of the Vajji territory. Pāṭaligāma having been fortified, gave rise to the city of Pāṭaliputta, the second and later capital of Magadha which suffered thrice from the action of water, fire and earthquake.<sup>5</sup> The *Dhammapada*-Commentary (iii, p. 439f.) places Rājagaha at a distance of five leagues from the Ganges. The country of Magadha comprised as many as eighty thousand villages.

<sup>1</sup> Law, *op. cit.*, pp. 16-17.

<sup>2, 3</sup> Law, *op. cit.*, p. 51.

<sup>4</sup> Rockhill, *Life of the Buddha*, p. 250.

<sup>5</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, 88.

<sup>6</sup> *Vinayā*, i, p. 179.

Āṅga: The kingdom or country of Āṅga, 4,000 *li* in extent according to Hiuen Tsang, lay to the east of Magadha, separated from the latter by the river Campā. On the north it was bounded by the Ganges. Āṅga, as described in the *Mahābhārata*, may be supposed to have comprised the districts of Bhagalpur and Monghyr. Its capital Campā on the right bank of the Ganges, formerly known by the name of Mālinī,<sup>1</sup> stood at a distance of sixty yojanas from Mithilā.<sup>2</sup> Bhaddiya and Assapura are two other cities that find mention.<sup>3</sup> Āpāna is mentioned as a township in Āṅguttarāpa, a tract which lay 'north of the river Mahi, evidently a part of Āṅga on the other side of that river'.<sup>4</sup> The way from Bhaddiya to Āpāna lay through Āṅguttarāpa.<sup>5</sup> Āṅga was a prosperous country and Campā was undoubtedly one of the most flourishing cities and a great centre of trade and commerce. In its neighbourhood was the famous tank of Gaggarā.<sup>6</sup>

Kajaṅgala: The country of Kajaṅgala formed an eastern boundary of the Middle country just beyond which was a Brahmin village of Mahāsālā.

<sup>1</sup> *Mahābhārata*, xii, 5.6-7; *Yā Mālānyabharat purā*. Also *Matsya Purāṇa*, 48.97; *Vāyu*, 99.105; *Harivamśa*, 31.49.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, vi, p. 32.

<sup>3</sup> *Majjhima*, i, p. 271; *Dhammapada-āṭṭhakathā*, i, p. 384.

<sup>4</sup> *Malalasekera*, *op. cit.*, p. 22; *Paramatthajotikā*, II, p. 437.

<sup>5</sup> *Vinaya*, i, p. 243f.; *Dhammapada-āṭṭhakathā*, iii, p. 363.

<sup>6</sup> *Dīghanī*, i, p. 111; *Sumanāgalavīḍśinti*, i, p. 279.

The *Divyāvadāna*, as already pointed out, fixes the Pundakakṣa hill as its eastern boundary beyond which was Puṇḍravardhana in North Bengal, also included in the Mid-land. But there is no justification in saying that the country of Kajaṅgala, with its chief town of the same name, was in any sense identical with Puṇḍravardhana. According to Hiuen Tsang,<sup>1</sup> the country of Kajaṅgala, 2,000 *li* in circuit, was bounded on the north by the Ganges; the kingdom of Puṇḍravardhana could be reached from its capital by journeying about 600 *li* eastward across the Ganges. Kajaṅgala was a prosperous place where food was easily available (dabba-sambhārā-sulabhā).<sup>2</sup> The *Ānguttara Nikāya*<sup>3</sup> speaks of a Bamboo-grove at the town of Kajaṅgala, while in the *Majjhima Nikāya*, we have mention of another locality named Mukheluvana.<sup>4</sup> At the south-east of this country was the river called Salalavatī.

Sumbha: This was the land of the Sumbhas with Setaka, Sedaka or Desaka as its chief town.<sup>5</sup> Dr. R. C. Majumdar inclines to identify Sumbha with Suhma (modern Midnapore district). But the location of the tract is uncertain.

<sup>1</sup> Beal, *Buddhist Records*, ii, p. 193f.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 310f.

*Ānguttara*, v, p. 54f.

<sup>4</sup> *Majjhima*, iii, p. 298.

<sup>5</sup> *Samyutta*, v, p. 89; *Jātaka*, i, p. 393.

Vajji territory: It appears to have comprised the principalities of eight<sup>1</sup> or nine<sup>2</sup> allied clans. The names of all of them are nowhere given; these are left only to be inferred. The Pali works expressly speak of Vajjigāma,<sup>3</sup> a locality of the Vajjis near about Vesāli. Vesāli (modern Besarh in the Muzaffarpur district of North Behar) was the headquarters of the Licchavis. The city was rich, prosperous and populous. 'It had 7,707 storied buildings, 7,707 pinnacled houses (kūṭagāras), 7,707 ārāmas, and 7,707 lotus ponds',<sup>4</sup>—too symmetrical to be accepted as a fact. It was encompassed by three walls at a distance of a gāvuta from one another each provided with gates and watch-towers. The early Jaina texts locate Kundagāma, the seat of power of the Nātas in a suburb of Vesāli.<sup>5</sup> The country of the Bhaggas is placed between Vesāli and Sāvatthī.<sup>6</sup> Videha (modern Tirhut), the land of the Videhas, with Mithilā as its capital, was bounded by the Kosikī in the east, the Ganges in the south, the Sadānirā in the west, and the Himalayas in the north.<sup>7</sup> Cunningham identi-

<sup>1</sup> *Sumangalavilāsīnt*, ii, p. 519: an inference drawn from the expression *atthakulikā*.

<sup>2</sup> *Kalpaśūtra*, sec. 128; *Nirayāvalī Śūtra*: an inference drawn from the expression *navamallaki*.

<sup>3</sup> *Samyutta*, v, 348, etc.

<sup>4</sup> *Vinaya Texts*, ii, 171; *Lalitavistara*, ed. Lefmann, Ch. iii, p. 21.

<sup>5</sup> *Ācārāṅgasūtra*, *Jaina Sūtras*, *SBL*, vol. xxii, pp. x-xi.

<sup>6</sup> Law, *Geography of Early Buddhism*, pp. 7, 30, 31.

fies Mithilā with Janakapura, a 'small town within the Nepal border, north of which the Mozaffarpur and Darbhanga districts meet'.<sup>1</sup>

The high road connecting Rājagaha with Kapilavatthu passed through such places in the Vajji territory as Koṭigāma on the left bank of the Ganges, Nādikā, Vesālī, Hatthigāma, Ambagāma and Jambugāma. There was a natural forest called Mahāvana in the neighbourhood of Vesālī.<sup>2</sup> Mithilā, the capital of Videha, had at each of its four gates a market town of the Yavamajjhaka shape.<sup>3</sup>

Ukkācelā (but not Ukkāvelā, met with as a variant) was a Vajjian town on the left bank of the Ganges.<sup>4</sup>

Malla country: The kingdom or country of the Mallas,<sup>5</sup> stated to be nine in the Jaina canonical texts, comprised in theory nine territories, one of each of the confederate clans. But the Pali canonical texts bring into prominence the territories of just two of them, one with its headquarters at Kusinārā (Kuśinagara) and other with Pāvā as its chief town. The first abutted, on the Śākya territory and the second on the Vajji. Bhoganagara was a Malla

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Geography of Early Buddhism*, pp. 7, 30, 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Sumangalavilāsiṇī*, i, 309.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, vi, p. 330.

<sup>4</sup> *Majjhuma*, i, p. 225; *Samyutta*, iv, p. 261f.; *Papañcasūdani*, Sinhalese ed., i, p. 447.

<sup>5</sup> *Kalpasūtra*, §128; *Nirayāvalī Sūtra*.

town between Jambugāma and Pāvā on the high road connecting Vesālī with Kapilavatthu.<sup>1</sup> The river Kakutthā formed the boundary between the two territories, for after crossing it one could reach the *Sal* grove of Kusinārā on the river Hiraññavatī. Kusinārā which was just a daub town was in bygone ages the most flourishing and magnificent city of Kusāvatī, 12 leagues in length from east to west and 7 leagues in breadth from north to south.<sup>2</sup> Anupiya or Anupiyā was another Malla town, evidently on the same high road, between Kusinārā and the river Anomā,<sup>3</sup> the latter serving as a dividing line between the Śakya and Malla territories. The Uruvelakappa was yet another Malla town. In the neighbourhood stood Mahāvana which was an extensive forest.<sup>4</sup> Of the two cities of Pāvā and Kusinārā, the first may probably be identified with Kasia on the smaller Gandak and to the east of the Gorakhpur district, and the second with the village called Padaraona, 12 miles to the north-east of Kasia. Hiuen Tsang's journey from Kuśinagara to Benares covering a distance of 500 *li* lay through a great forest.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Dīgha*, i, p. 123; *Sutta-nipāta*, verses 1012-13.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 146f.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, i, pp. 65, 140, *Dīgha*, iii, p. 1, *Vinaya*, ii, pp. 180, 184.

<sup>4</sup> *Samyutta*, iv, pp. 327, 330, v, p. 228, *Ānguttara*, iv, p. 438.

<sup>5</sup> Beal, *Buddhist Records*, ii, p. 43.

Śākya and Koliya territories: The Śākya territory lay to the east of Kośala and due south of the Himalayas. It was then rich and prosperous.<sup>1</sup> Where it bordered on the kingdom of Kośala, there was the Sakya town Uḍūmpa or Medalūmpa, opposite the Kosalan town of Naṅgaraka. Kapilavatthu (identified by Rhys Davids with Tilaura, two miles from Tauliva in the Nepal Terai), was the capital of the Śākyas. According to Hiuen Tsang, the city was situated to the south-east of Sāvatthī, at a distance of 500 *li* or so from the latter.<sup>2</sup> It was situated on the high road which passed through Setavyā to connect it with Sāvatthī.<sup>3</sup> Among other towns, mention is made of Cātumā, Sāmagāma, Sakkara, Silavatī and Khomadussa.

The Koliyas were distinguished as those of Devadaha and those of Rāmagāma.<sup>4</sup> Accordingly they possessed two territories. That of the former was separated from the Śākya territory by the river Rohini. On the bank of this river on the Śākya side stood Lumbinivana, the birth-place of the Buddha, mentioned in Aśoka's inscription as Lumminigāma, the modern village of Rummindēi, only 10 miles to

<sup>1</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, verse 1012.

<sup>2</sup> Beal, *op. cit.*, ii, p. 13.

<sup>3</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, verse 1012.

<sup>4</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 28.

<sup>5</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 164.

the east of Kapilavatthu and 2 miles to the north of Bhagavānpur.<sup>1</sup> Devadaha on the other side of the Rohinī (Hiuen Tsang's Tailavāha ?) was the seat of government of the first Koliyan territory. Rāmagāma, the second Koliyan territory, lay, according to Hiuen Tsang, to the east of Kapilavatthu, at a distance of about 300 *li* across a wild jungle.<sup>2</sup> In order to reach Kusinārā from it, the pilgrim had to walk north-east through a great forest, along a dangerous and difficult road, where wild oxen, herds of elephants, and robbers, and hunters caused incessant trouble.<sup>3</sup> In the neighbourhood of Kapilavatthu was the famous pleasance of Nigrodha.

Pippalivana: This is described as the land of the Moriyas. It is well-nigh impossible to offer any definite suggestion for its identification. One may be even tempted to find an echo of its name in that of Piprāvā, a village in the Birdpur Estate in the district of Basti.<sup>4</sup> But a Buddhist tradition connects it with Himatala,<sup>5</sup> which, if correct, may lead one to think that it lay somewhere in the kingdom which came to be known by the name of Nepal.

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 30.

<sup>2</sup> Beal, *op. cit.*, ii, p. 25.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 31.

<sup>4</sup> *Vinaya*, i, 82; *Jātaka*, i, p. 88f.

<sup>5</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 29.

<sup>6</sup> *Mahānālanda* Sinhalese ed. n 180

Allakappa and Vēthadīpa: The first is mentioned as the land of the Bulis and the second as the native land of a Brahmin called Dōna. In the *Dhammapada* commentary, both of them are called kingdoms, the first being ten leagues in extent.<sup>1</sup> The Sanskrit form of the first name would be Ādrakalpa, and that of the second Vēṣṭadvīpa. Hiuen Tsang locates the site of Dronastūpa,<sup>2</sup> that is to say, of Vēthadīpa, 100 *li* south-east of Mahāsāra (Pali Mahāsālā, Mahāsāla), identified by St. Martin with Masār, a village six miles to the west of Arrah. But the Brahmin village of Mahasālā is located in Pali texts to the east of Kajangala in the eastern extremity of the Majjhimadesa.<sup>3</sup> As for the identification of Allakappa, relying only on a verbal similarity of names, fancy may choose between Arrah on the right bank of the Ganges and Adra on the B.N. Railway.

Kesaputta: In the *Āṅguttara Nikāya* (i, p. 188) the Kālāmas are associated with a place called Kesaputta, which is a name apparently similar to Pātaliputta, Seriyāputta (Barhut Inscriptions), Satiyāputta and Keralaputa (Aśoka's R.E. II). Buddhaghosa, however, suggests that both Kālāma and Kcsaputta were nigamā or

<sup>1</sup> *Dhammapada-attīhakathā*, i, p. 161.

<sup>2</sup> Beal, *Buddhist Records*, ii, p. 65.

<sup>3</sup> *Vinaya*, i, p. 197; *Jātaka*, i, p. 49.

townships,<sup>1</sup> without telling us where these were actually situated. The Kesaputtas may remind one of the Kesins, a people connected in *Pāṇini* (VI, 4.165) with the Pañcālas and Dālbhyas.

Ālavī: This is the name of both the country and its principal town. The Ardhamāgadhi spelling of the name is Ālabhī. The town was thirty yojanas from Sāvatthī<sup>2</sup> and twelve from Benares,<sup>3</sup> and it lay between Sāvatthī and Rājagaha. The way from Sāvatthī to Ālavī and thence to Rājagaha lay through Kīṭāgiri.<sup>4</sup> Mrs. Rhys Davids inclines to think that Ālavī was on the bank of the Ganges,<sup>5</sup> evidently basing her suggestion on the fury of the Yakkha Ālavaka who would throw the Buddha over to the other side of the Ganges (pāra-Gangāya), which, however, is treated by Dr. Malalasekera as merely a rhetorical expression without any geographical significance.<sup>6</sup> Ālavī as a principality was undoubtedly included in the Kosalan empire.

II Pubbanta or Prācyā (Eastern India): The Pubbanta or Prācyā may be defined as the extreme eastern part of India which lay to the

<sup>1</sup> *Manorathapūrani*: *Kālāmānam nigamo*; *Kālāma nāma Khattiyā tesam nigamo*. *Kesaputtiyā ti Kesaputtinigamavāsino*.

<sup>2</sup> *Paramatthaṭhajotikā*, II, p. 220.

<sup>3</sup> Watters, *Yuan Chwang*, ii, p. 61.

<sup>4</sup> *Vinaya*, ii, p. 170f.

<sup>5</sup> *PSalms of the Brethren*, p. 408, f.n. 5.

<sup>6</sup> Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, i, p. 298.

east of the Mid-land. The eastern boundary of the Mid-land changed, as we saw, from time to time, from Prayāga to Kāśī, from Kāśī to Kajaṅgala, and ultimately from the latter to Puṇḍravardhana. The only locality to the east of Kajaṅgala which was included in the Mid-land was the Brahmin village of Mahāsālā or Mahāsāla which has not as yet been satisfactorily identified. Its south-east boundary was formed by the river Salalavatī (Sarāvatī) to be identified either with the Silai (Silāvatī) which taking its rise in the Chotanagpur hills and being united with the Dalkisor (Dvārikeśvarī) flows down as the Rupanarayan<sup>1</sup> through the districts of Bankura and Midnapore, or with the Svarnarekhā or Suvarṇarekhā which also taking its rise in the Chotanagpur hills flows down through the districts of Manbhumi and Midnapore. The Jaina Ācārāṅga Sūtra speaks of Lādha (Rādha) as a pathless country with its two divisions: Subbhabhūmi (probably the same as Sk. Suhma) and Vajjabhūmi,<sup>2</sup> which may be taken to correspond to the modern district of Midnapore. The country of Lādha, thus identified extended from the south-east corner of the Mid-land to the Bay of Bengal and lay just to the north-east of Kalinga. If the Subbhabhūmi of the Ācārāṅga be identical with the Suhma of the *Mahābhārata*

---

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 68.

<sup>2</sup> Jacobi, *Jaina Sūtras*, i, p. 84.

(ii, 30.25) it may be taken to have formed then the upper or northern division of the district of Midnapore, while Vajjabhūmi with Tāmalitti (Tāmralipta, modern Tamluk on the western bank of the Rupnarayan), the lower or southern division. Tāmalitti (also spelt as Tāmalitthi), which seems to have stood formerly at the mouth of the Ganges, was a great sea-port town of the time. It is said that Aśoka reached it from Pātaliputra by crossing the Ganges and then traversing the Viñjhātavī.<sup>1</sup> Sumbha mentioned in the early Pali texts with Setaka, Sedaka or Desaka as its important town would seem to have been a locality other than one corresponding to Subbha or Suhma. Hiuen Tsang speaks of a Śvetapura, obviously the same name as the Pali Setaka, which lay within the Vajji territory, 80 or 90 *li* south from the neighbourhood of Vesālī.<sup>2</sup>

As for Puṇḍra or Puṇḍravardhana (identified with the modern district and town of Bogra), it lay, according to the *Divyāvadāna*, to the east of the Puṇḍrakakṣa (Puṇḍrakakṣa) hill, and according to Hiuen Tsang, about 100 *li* east from the northern end of Kajaṅgala across the Ganges, say, from the isolated hill at Sakrigalli. A Brāhmaṇi inscription on a circular stone seal of the Maurya Age, found at Mahāsthāngarh near the town of Bogra, mentions Puṇḍra as a

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 68.

<sup>2</sup> Beal, *op. cit.*, ii, p. 75.

beautiful and prosperous town.<sup>1</sup> The way to the city of Pundravardhana from Kajangala must have been through the place now covered by the district of Malda. This is precisely the route from North Behar to Pundra indicated in the *Mahābhārata* (ii, 30.21-22).

Vaṅga<sup>2</sup> finds mention in the *Mahāniddesa* (pp. 155, 415) as an important centre of trade and commerce, and in the *Bhagavatī Sūtra* and Pali chronicles as a country or kingdom. In the *Mahābhārata* (ii, 44.9), Vaṅga is placed contiguous to Aṅga. It is evident even from the Pali canonical texts that Vaṅganta or western extremity of Vaṅga bordered on Aṅga-Magadha. According to the Pali chronicles, the district of Lāla (equated with Lāṭa of Western India) was situated between Vaṅga on one side and Kalinga on the other.<sup>3</sup> Thus the name Vaṅga in its earlier denotation may be taken to have represented central Bengal extending as far west as the eastern end of Kajangala. Subsequently, say from the time of the Imperial Guptas, Vaṅga, as might be ascertained from the *Mahābhārata* (ii, 30.23), came to denote Eastern Bengal proper, practically identical with Hiuen Tsang's Samatāta. Suvaṇṇakūṭa mentioned in the *Mahāniddesa*

<sup>1</sup> D. R. Bhandarkar in *E.J.*

<sup>2</sup> For details, *vide* B. C. Law, *Ancient Indian Tribes*, vol. II, Ch. I.

<sup>3</sup> *Dīpavaṃsa*, p. 54; *Mahāvaṃsa*, p. 56.

(pp. 155, 415) as another centre of trade and commerce appears to have been the same place as Suvaṇṇakuḍya in the *Arthaśāstra* which Bhṛṭṭasvāmi locates in Kāmarūpa.<sup>1</sup>

III Himavanta-padesa (Himalayan region): According to all Indian traditions, Buddhist, Jaina and Brahmanical, Jambudvīpa as the southern continent extended to the north up to the southern side of Mount Sumeru placed in the *Mārkandeya Purāṇa* in the middle of a country called Ilāvṛta containing two mountain ranges, the western called Mālyavat and the eastern known as Gandhamādana. The Purāṇa locates the four mountains: Mandara, Merumandara, Supārśva and Kumuda on the east, south, west and north sides of Sumeru respectively. The river Jambu taking its rise in the Merumandara mountain, flows down through the Ilāvṛtavarsa.<sup>2</sup> The Niṣadha (Pali Nisabha)<sup>3</sup> mountain range is placed to the south of the Ilāvṛtavarsa to the south of which lay the country of Harivarṣa. In between Bhāratavarṣa and Harivarṣa are placed the Himalayan range and the Hemakūṭa, the former lying to the south of the latter. This is also the setting of the countries and mountain ranges to be found in the *Jambudīva-paṇṇatti* and *Mahābhārata*.

<sup>1</sup> N. N. Das Gupta in *Indian Culture*, vol. v, p. 339.

<sup>2</sup> *Mārkandeya Purāṇa*, Ch. 57.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, vi, pp. 204, 212; *Apadāna*, i, p. 67.

The Hemakūṭa region is also known as Kimpuruṣavarṣa, the land of the Kimpuruṣas, and the Haimavata region as Kinnarakhaṇḍa, the land of the Kinnaras.<sup>1</sup> Uttarakuru or northern continent, which is the romantic kingdom of Kuvera, is placed alike in the Pali texts and the *Mahābhārata* on the north side of Mount Sumeru.

According to Pali tradition, however, the Himalayan region extended to the north up to the Gandhamādana range. The Pali descriptions of the ranges and their setting are rather clumsy and far from systematic; these are moreover silent as to the existence of Harivarṣa and the rest. But as in the Purāṇas, so in the Jātakas the Kinnaras, Kimpuruṣas and Vidyādharaś are associated with the Himalayan mountains. Besides Nisabha (Niṣadha), the *Apadāna* names a few other mountains in the neighbourhood of the Himavanta: Kadamba (p. 382), Kukkura (p. 155, better Kukkuṭa, p. 178), Kosika (p. 381), Gotama (p. 162), Paduma (p. 362), Bhārika (p. 440), Bhūtagaṇa (p. 179), Lambaka (p. 15), Vasabha (Vṛṣabha, p. 166), Vikaṭa (p. 227), Samāṅga (p. 437) and Sobhita (p. 328).<sup>2</sup> Of the lakes mentioned, the most important was, of course, the Anotatta or Mānas-sarovar, associated with the Kelāsa

---

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Geographical Essays*, p. 119.

and Cittakūṭa peaks. The *Jambudīva-paññatti* seems right in suggesting that this really consisted of two lakes, each called Mahāpadma-hrada, one connected with the Kṣudrahimavanta or Western Himalayan range, and the other connected with the Mahāhimavanta or Eastern Himalayan range. Of the four rivers channelling out from this lake, Gaṅgā that flowed down southwards branched off into five main rivers of Majjhimadesa, Rohitā flowing eastwards may be identified with the Lauhitya or Brahmaputra, Sindhu flowing northwards with the Indus, and one flowing westwards with the Sutlej.

The Himalayan region was penetrated by the *tāpasas* (hermits), *vanacarakas*, *migaluddakas* (hunters), and kings on hunting expedition. The hermits and ascetics built many hermitages there. Some of the Jātakas and Apadānas contain most charming and romantic descriptions of the hermitages and of the fauna and flora that were really the fauna and flora of Jambudvīpa as a whole. The hollows in the mountains and hills served as dens for lions, tigers, etc. The beasts generally lived near about the rivers, lakes, and springs. The Pali works speak of four species of lions: (1) those resembling the cow, pigeon-coloured and eating grass; (2) black lions; (3) light yellow lions; and (4) those possessing a big mane. Among other members of the feline

species, mention is constantly made of *vyagghā* (ordinary tigers), *dīpī* (panthers), *taracchā* (hyenas), *acchā* or *bhallukā* (bears), *majjārā* (cats). These speak also of *kukkuras* or *sunakhas* (dogs). The *khaggā* or *palāsadā* (rhinoceros), *gavajā* (gayals), *usabhā* (bulls), *mahisā* (buffaloes) and diverse species of deer (*migā*)<sup>1</sup>: the *ruru*, *rohanta*, *tipallattha*, *citta*, *pasada*, *nigrodha*, *sākha*, *eni*, and the rest. We have mention also of *ajā* (goats) and *elakā* (rams). The Himalayan forests are said to have abounded in elephants living in herds or as rogues, distinguished as *vāmanika* (dwarfish), *uccākalārikā*, *uccākañerukā*, and *chaddantā* (six-tusked). The last-mentioned class are associated with the Chaddanta lake and noted for the high quality of the ivory. They contained horses (*assā*) of diverse breeds, the *sindhu* and *valāha* being the two best of them. They abounded also in such reptiles and *ajagarā* (pythons), *nāgā* or *sappā* (snakes) divided into four families of *virūpakkha*, *erāpatha*, *chavyāputta* and *kañha*. They do not fail also to refer to the water-snakes feeding on green frogs (*bhekā*) and *godhā* (iguanas). The rivers were habitats of *sumsumārā* (porpoises and crocodiles), *kumbhīlā* (alligators), *makarā*, *ogāhā* and *tantiggāhā*. The rivers and lakes were full of fish: *pāthīnā*, *muñjarohitā*, *maggurā* and

---

<sup>1</sup> JRAS, 1888—Animals classed as deer in the Jātakas, p. 542

the like, and *kulirakā* or *kakkaṭakā* (crabs, small and monstrous). The birds were numerous: *cakkavākā* (ruddy geese), *haṃsā*, *ravihaṃsā*, *kadambā* (*nīlahaṃsā*), *jīvamjivakā*, sweet-voiced *kokilā* and *karavikā*, *vakā* and *koñcā* (cranes, herons), *kosikā* (owls), *kālakannikā* (birds of ill omen), *kākā* (crows), *kapotā* or *pārevatā* (doves and pigeons), *kunālā*, *kurarā*, *supaṇṇā* or *garuḷā* (kites, eagles), *gijjhā* (vultures), *kakutthā* (*phasianus gallus*), *vattakā*, *latukikā*, *dindibhā* (partridges), and above all, *sikhī* or *morā* (peacocks). Of the trees, mention may be made of *nigrodhā* (banyan), *assatthā* (peepul), *udumbarā* (fig), *amba* (mango), *jambu* (rose-apple), *panasa* (jackfruit), *sirīsa* (*shorea robusta*), *nāga* (*mesua ferrea*), *hārītaka* (*terminalia chebula*), *āmalaka* (*phyllanthus emblica*), *vibhiṭaka* (*terminalia belerica*); of the creepers, *āśāvatīlatā*, *atimutta* (*mādhavīlatā*); of *kadali* (banana), *mātilungi* (citron); of the flower trees, *campaka*, *ketaka* (*castus speciosus*). The lakes were decked with the *uppala* (lilies, white, red and blue), *paduma* (lotus with one hundred petals) and *pundarīkā* (lotus with one thousand petals).<sup>1</sup>.

IV *Uttarāpatha* or *Udīcyā* (North-western India): This part of India extended west and north-west from the Brahmin village of *Thūṇa* or from *Pṛthudaka* (modern Pehoa), that is to

---

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Apadāna* in *JBBRAS.*, xiii, 1937, p. 236; Barua, *Barhut*, iii, pp. 35, 586.

say, from a place near about Thaneswar. It was bounded on the north and west by the belt of the western Himalayan range called Kṣudra-himavanta reaching down to the Arabian sea. It may be said that the region of Uttarāpatha lay to the north of Aparānta and the west of the Buddhist Mid-land, and was watered by the Himalayan rivers forming the Indus group. Defined in these terms, the region may be taken as identical with what is called Udīcya in the *Mārkandeya Purāṇa*, and approximately with Manu's Brahmāvarta and Brahmarṣideśa. The important *janapadas* that are referred in this Purāṇa to this region include, among others, Aparānta, Śūdra, Gāndhāra, Yavana, Sindhu, Sauvira, Madra, Pārada, Kekaya, Kāmboja, Darada, Pahava, Barbara, Vāhlīka and Kāśmīra.<sup>1</sup> In Pali literature Kāmpabhoga with Asitañjana as its capital,<sup>2</sup> Kasmira-Gāndhāra and Kamboja<sup>3</sup> are definitely placed in Uttarā-patha. According to Brahmanical tradition, the Kāmpa-territory was the kingdom of Mathurā,<sup>4</sup> i.e., Sūrasena of which Mathurā was the capital in the time of Mahāvīra and Buddha. The Yona, Kamboja and Gāndhāra are included,

<sup>1</sup> *Mārkandeya Purāṇa*, Ch. 57.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 79.

<sup>3</sup> *Āṅguttara*, iv, pp. 252, 256, 260; *Vinaya*, iii, p. 6; *Samapta-pāśādikā*, Sinhalese ed., 1, p. 179.

<sup>4</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., p. 119.

as we saw, in some of the Pali canonical lists of important countries. These three are the countries that are referred in Aśoka's R.E. V to Aparānta or western end of Jambudvīpa, Gandhāra may be taken to have comprised the whole of the districts of Peshawar (Puruṣapura) and Rawalpindi in the northern Punjab. Its capital Takkasilā (modern Taxila) was both a centre of trade and an ancient seat of learning. According to the Jātakas, its distance from Benares was 2,000 leagues. Kasmīra is not other than the modern State of Kashmore and Jammu which lies to the east of Peshawar and Rawalpindi. The location of Yona and Kamboja is not finally settled. Evidently they must have been localities near about Kasmīra-Gandhāra. Other places mentioned in early Pali texts and to be included in Uttarāpatha are the countries of Vajirā,<sup>1</sup> Suddaka, Khuddaka, Madda, Alasanda, Pallava, Bāhika and Babbara.<sup>2</sup> Of these, the city of Vajirā is obviously no other than what finds mention in the *Bodhisattvāvadāna-Kalpalatā* (p. 4) as Vajrāvatī and is placed in Uttarāpatha. The *Mahābhārata* (ix. 37.1) definitely locates the land of the Suddakas (Sūdrakas) in western Rajputana where the Sarasvatī disappears (*yatra naṣṭā Sarasvatī*). But the Greek historians place the

---

<sup>1</sup> *Buddhanan̄sa*, xxviii, 8; *Dīpavān̄sa*, p. 27

<sup>2</sup> *Apadāna*, ii, p. 359.

Sodrai in the western part of the Punjab. The land of the Khuddakas (Sk. Kṣudrakā,<sup>1</sup> Greek Sudracae, Oxydrakai) which is placed in the Greek accounts between the Hydraotes (Ravi) and the Hyphasis (Bias), may be located in the district of Montgomery.<sup>2</sup> Madra was the country of the Sivis which had Sāgala (Sk. Sākala,<sup>3</sup> modern Sialkot) as its capital; the river Irāvatī flowed through it.<sup>4</sup> Alasanda (variant Allasanda) was a city in the Yona country which is mentioned in the *Mahāniddesa* as a centre of trade and commerce.<sup>5</sup> The Greek equivalent of the name would be Alexandria. In the *Milindapañha* Alasanda is described as a *dipa*,<sup>6</sup> which has led scholars to suggest that it was 'an island in the Indus in the territory of Baktria'.<sup>7</sup> But according to Dr. Geiger, it was probably 'the town founded by the Macedonian king in the country of Paropanisadae near Kabul'.<sup>8</sup> The fact seems to be this that Alasanda was both the name of a country and its chief town. In the *Mahāniddesa* (pp. 155, 415) it is mentioned just after Yona

<sup>1</sup> *Mahābhārata*, II, 52.15; VII, 68.9.

<sup>2</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, p. 205.

<sup>3</sup> *Mahābhārata*, II, 31.119.

<sup>4</sup> *Matsya Purāna*, 114.7, 15-18.

<sup>5</sup> *Mahāniddesa*, pp. 155, 415.

<sup>6</sup> *Milinda*, pp. 82, 327, 331, 359.

<sup>7</sup> Rhys Davids, *The Questions of King Milinda*, S.B.E., I, p. xxiii.

<sup>8</sup> *Mahāvamsa*, English translation, p. 194, f.n. 3.

and Paramayona. Further, it would seem that Sāgala which was formerly the capital of Madda became afterwards the capital of a Yona kingdom. The Pali texts also speak of the two lands of Sindhu and Sovira, each of which is described as a great centre of trade and commerce. Here Sindhu, also mentioned as a kingdom, may be easily identified with the province of Sind on the Arabian sea. In the Mahāgovinda Suttanta Sovira has been described as a kingdom with Roruka as its capital. It was probably situated between the Indus and Jhelum. The story of Serissaka in the Peta and Vimānavatthus definitely tells us that the way of the caravan merchants (*Satthavāhā*) from Anga and Magadha to Sindhu-Sovira lay across a great desert, which was no other than the desert in Rajputana. Some rivers and ranges of hills had to be crossed with difficulty (*nadiyo pana pabbatānam ca duggā*).<sup>1</sup> The desert is described in the *Vanṇupatha* Jātaka as a sandy dosert, sixty leagues in extent (*satṭhiyajanikam marukantāram*).<sup>2</sup> Among the rivers that had to be crossed the commentary mentions the Candabbhāgā (Chenab) by name.<sup>3</sup> Immediately after Allasanda and Marukantāra, the *Mahāniddeśa* (pp. 155, 415)

<sup>1</sup> *Vimānavatthu*, p. 78.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, I, p. 107; p. 109: *vanṇu vucc... ....., jārukāmagge ti attho.*

<sup>3</sup> *Vimānavatthu* commentary (vii, 10), p. 338.

introduces such places of importance from the point of view of trade and commerce as Jaṇṇupatha (corrected as Vaṇṇupatha), Aja-patha, Mendapatha, Saṅkupatha, Chattapatha, Vamsapatha, Sakunapatha, Mūsikāpatha, Dari-patha and Vettādhāra (variant Vettacara, Vettacāra). That the Vaṇṇu, Vettacara and Saṅkupatha are mentioned as roads (maggam) in the Serissa Vimāna-story<sup>1</sup> has led Dr. Barua to suggest that these were originally names of different parts of Uttarāpatha taken in the sense of the north-western trade-route, and that like it they lent their names to the regions across which they lay.<sup>2</sup> These, as convincingly shown by Sylvain Levi and others, became subsequently connected with a trade-route connecting Suvarṇabhūmi with Suvarṇadvīpa.<sup>3</sup> But even on the evidence of Pāṇini's commentators who introduce some of these names<sup>4</sup> in connection with the Sūtra, v, 1.77: *Uttarapathenāhṛtañca*, it may be established that they were associated with a journey to and from Uttarāpatha.

The Pali Babbara is no other than Barbara which is associated in the *Mahābhārata* (xii,

<sup>1</sup> *Vimānavatthu* commentary, vii, 10, p. 338.

<sup>2</sup> Barua, *Old Brāhmaṇi Inscriptions*.

<sup>3</sup> *Etudes Asiatiques*, ii, p. 45f.; R. C. Majumdar, *Suvarṇadriḍpa*, p. 56f.

<sup>4</sup> *Vāri-janḍala-sthala-kāntārāja-saṅku-pūrvāc ca*

207.43) with Yauna, Kamboja, Gandhāra and Kirāta and placed in Uttarāpatha. Babbara or Barbaricum is described in the *Periplus* as a market-town of Minnagara on the Erythræan sea.<sup>1</sup> Pallava may be identified with Pahlava (Parthia) in the *Mahābhārata*<sup>2</sup> and Bahika with Vāhika.<sup>3</sup> The *Divyāvadāna* mentions a city by the name of Utpalavati in Uttarāpatha,<sup>4</sup> which may be easily identified with Puṣkarāvatī or Puṣkalāvatī. Puṣkalāvatī (modern Parang and Chārsada, 17 milos north-east of Peshawar on the Swat river) was one of the two most important cities in Gandhāra.<sup>5</sup> Kekaka or Kekaya is another country with its capital of the same name which finds mention in the early Buddhist and Jaina texts. According to the *Rāmāyaṇa* (ii, 68.19–22; vii, 113.14), ‘the Kekaya territory lay beyond the Vipāśā and abutted on the Gandharva or Gandhāra-visaya’, and its ‘metropolis was Rājagṛha’.<sup>6</sup> In the Jaina *Rāyapaseṇi*, Seyaviyā (Pali Setavyā) is described as a city in the kingdom of Kekaya,<sup>7</sup> while in the Pali canonical texts it is located in Kosala and on

<sup>1</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., p. 362.

<sup>2</sup> Hopkins, *Great Epic of India*, p. 393f.

<sup>3</sup> Pāṇini, xv, 2.117: *Vāhika-grāmebhyas ca.*

<sup>4</sup> *Divyāvadāna*, p. 470.

<sup>5</sup> *Rāmāyaṇa*, vii, 114.11; *Vāyu Purāṇa*, 88.189–90.

<sup>6</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, pp. 52–53.

<sup>7</sup> *Indian Antiquary*, 1891, p. 375; Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, p. 54.

the high road between Kapilavatthu and Sāvatthī.

The *Apadāna* mentions the Sindhu (Indus), Vitamsā (Vitastā), and Candabhāgā (Chenab) among the important rivers of Uttarāpatha, and points out that the Gaṅgā Bhāgirasi (Bhāgirathi) taking its rise in the Himalayas, flowed by the gate of Hāṃsavati, which was an ancient city in Uttarāpatha. The Amarikā was a river which flowed down from the foot of the Samaṅga mountain belonging to the Himalayan range.

V Aparānta or Paścāddeśa (Western India): This may be taken to represent that part of Western India which lay to the west of the Buddhist Mid-land and to the north and south respectively of the Dakkhināpatha and Uttarāpatha. According to the *Kāvya-mimāṃsā*, as we noted, the region extended westward from Devasabhā (identified with modern Dewas in the Central Indian States Agency). From the Buddhist definition of the Middle country it may be inferred that Aparānta extended westward from the western side of the kingdom of Vatsa. Bhagawanlal Indraji took Aparānta to be the western sea-board of India. The Bhoja and Rāṣṭra countries that are referred in the *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa* to the Vindhya region are mentioned in Asoka's R.E. V. as examples of countries in Western India.

(Aparānta). The *Kāvya-mīmāṃsā* mentions, among others, Devasabhā, Surāṣṭra, Bhṛgu-kaccha, Kaccha, Ānarta and Arbuda as representative countries of Aparānta. The *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa* offers a longer list containing the names of such countries as Sūrpāraka, Kosala (South Kosala), Vidiśā, Pulinda, Nāsiķa, Marukaccha (Bhṛgu-kaccha), Kaccha, Surāṣṭra and Avantī.<sup>1</sup> To them we may add Śurasena and Matsya which may as well be referred to Uttarāpatha. According to Hiuen Tsang's account, Western India seems to have comprised 'Sindh, Western Rajputana, Cutch, Gujarat and a portion of the adjoining coast on the lower course of the Narmadā'.<sup>2</sup>

The most important among the countries in Aparānta was Avantī which formed one of the three maṇḍalas of Jambudīpa, the other two being Pācīna and Dakkhināpatha.<sup>3</sup> It appears to have been divided by the river Vettavatī into north and south, the north having its capital at Ujjeni (modern Ujen), and the second at Māhissatī (Māhiṣmatī, later known as Gonaddha). It is probably the second part which has been described as Avantī Dakkhināpatha.<sup>4</sup> Both

<sup>1</sup> *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa*, 57.

<sup>2</sup> Cunningham, *Ancient Geography*, p. 690.

<sup>3</sup> Rhys Davids, *The Questions of King Milinda*, S.B.E., ii, p. 250, f.n. 1.

<sup>4</sup> D. R. Bhandarkar, *Carmichael Lectures* (1918), p. 54.

Ujjeni and Māhissatī stood on the Southern High Road extending from Rājagaha to Patitīthāna via Vesālī, Kapilavatthu,<sup>1</sup> Sāvatthī and Kosambi.<sup>2</sup>

Kurraghara was a town in Avantī adjoining the Papātapabbata.<sup>3</sup> Among other localities, mention may be made of Ghanaselapabbata, Makkarakāta, Velugāma<sup>4</sup> and Sudassanapura.<sup>5</sup> The country or kingdom may be taken to have corresponded roughly to 'modern Malwa, Nimar and adjoining parts of the Central Provinces'.<sup>6</sup> Vedisā or Vedisagiri (identified by Cunningham with the modern Bhilsa in the Gwalior State, 26 miles north-east of Bhopal) lay on the road to Ujjeni, at a distance of fifty yojanas from Pāṭaliputta.<sup>7</sup> Second in importance to Avantī was the kingdom or country of Sūrasena with Madhurā, Mathurā, modern Muttra on the right bank of the Yamunā as its capital. Sūrasena, often mentioned with Kaccha, is placed to the south of the Kuru country. The way from Sāvatthī to Madhurā lay through an important locality called Verañjā. Maccha (Sk. Matsya)

<sup>1</sup> JRAS., 1906, p. 453, ibid., 1898, p. 533.

<sup>2</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, v, 1014-13

<sup>3</sup> *Sampyutta*, iii, pp. 9, 12, iv, p. 115f, *Āṅguttara*, v, p. 46

<sup>4</sup> Malalasekera, op. cit., ii, p. 935.

<sup>5</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 22.

<sup>6</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 22.

<sup>7</sup> *Mahābhārata*, p. 98.

<sup>8</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 20.

<sup>9</sup> Malalasekera, ii, p. 930,

generally mentioned with Sūrasena is to be located to the south or south-west of Indapatta and to the south of Sūrasena. Its capital was Virāṭanagara (modern Bairāṭ) where a copy of Aśoka's Minor Rock Edict was engraved. It may be supposed to have comprised the State of Jaipur and included the whole of the State of Alwar with a portion of Bharatpur.<sup>1</sup> Suraṭṭha was another important country in Aparānta which was watered by a river called Sātodikā.<sup>2</sup> Its capital was Girinagara (modern Girnar in Kathiawad) containing as it does a whole set of Aśoka's Rock Edicts. The Sunāparanta or Aparānta is identified by the late Sir R. G. Bhandarkar with the modern Konkan. Its capital was Suppāraka, a highly important sea-port on the Arabian sea, modern Sopārā in the district of Thānā near Bombay. The Bharukaccha (Sk. Bhṛgukaccha) was another very important sea-port town on the Arabian sea which is identified with the modern Broach in Kathiawad and identical with the Barygaza of Ptolemy and the Periplus.<sup>3</sup> Bhoja, the territory of the Bhojaputtas, sixteen in number, may be identified with the modern Berar. The town of Satakanṇikā which is mentioned as the south-western boundary of the Buddhist Mid-land

<sup>1, 2</sup> Law, *Geography*, 19, 59, 56-57.

<sup>3</sup> *Samyutta*, i, p. 61f.; *Jātaka*, i, p. 45; Law, *op. cit.*, p. 62.

has not been as yet identified. If this spelling of the name be correct, it may be taken to have represented the place of origin of the Śātakarnīs.

VI Dakkhināpatha or Dāksinātya (Deccan): This represents South India which, according to the *Kāvya-mīmāṃsā*, extended southward from Māhiṣmatī identified with Māndhātā on the Narmadā. According to the *Jambudīva-pañnatti*, as we noted, it was the southern half of India to the south of the Vaitāḍhya or Vindhya range. From the Buddhist definition of the Mid-land, it appears that this part of Jambudipa lay to the south of the river Salalavatī and the town of Satakanṇikā. The Godāvarī and Narmadā regions are definitely placed in Dakkhināpatha. Besides the Nammadā and Godhāvarī, the early Pali texts mention these two rivers of South India: Kāverī and Kannapennā (Sk. Kṛṣnabenā).<sup>1</sup> The former is the famous river Kāverī which flowed into the sea through the Coḷa country of which we have a most patriotic description in the writings of Buddhadatta.<sup>2</sup> The Kannapennā was a river in the Mahīṃsaka country or Mysore.<sup>3</sup> Patitīṭhāna (modern Paithan) on the Godhāvarī is described as the southern terminus of the Southern High

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 162f.

<sup>2</sup> Buddhadatta's *Manuals*, PTS.

<sup>3</sup> Malalasekera, *op. cit.*, i, p. 498: 'At the bend of the river and near its source was the mountain Candaka'.

Road extending from Rājagaha. It was situated near about the modern Pañcavati at Nasik. On the banks of the Godhāvarī (Godāvari) and at the point where it formed a doab stood the two Andhra kingdoms of Assaka (Sk. Aśvaka, Aśmaka) with its capital at Potali or Potana (Paudanya of the *Mahābhārata*, i, 77.47), and Alaka or Muṇaka, the latter standing to the north of the former.<sup>1</sup> The Pali texts speak also of Kolapattana which was a harbour, probably on the Coromandel coast.<sup>2</sup> In the *Apadāna* (ii, pp. 358-59) we have mention of the Andhaka (Andhra) and Damila (Drāviḍa) countries. Siddhattha, Rājagiri, Pubbasela and Aparasela were all localities near about the Andhaka seat of power,<sup>3</sup> i.e., in the neighbourhood of Dhanakataka or Amarāvatī. The Damila territories, as represented in the Pali chronicles, included the countries of Cola with Kañcipura (modern Conjeeveram) as its capital, Pāṇḍya with Madhurasuttapattana (modern Madoura) as its chief town, and Kerala (Chera<sup>4</sup>) which was no other than Aśoka's Keralaputra. Kalinga finds mention in several texts both as a

<sup>1</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, verse 1011.

<sup>2</sup> *Milindapañha*, p. 359.

<sup>3</sup> *Kaihāvatihu-āphakaih*, quoted in 'Points of Controversy', pp. 5, 104; Law, *The Debates Commentary* (PTS), p. 62f.

<sup>4</sup> *Gullavanipa*, liii, 9; iv, 5, 12. Cf. S. K. Aiyangar, *South Indian Culture* (*The Cultural Heritage of India*, III, p. 71).

kingdom and a country with its capital at Dantapura (Pālura of a Nāgārjunikonda inscription), situated near Chicacole on the Bay of Bengal. But the *Apadāna* (ii, pp. 358-59) mentions at the same time Odda (Odra) and Okkala (Sk. Utkala) representing two distinct parts of Orissa. The Mekala country which finds mention in the *Apadāna* was probably a tract of land comprising the modern Amarakantaka hills and adjoining locality. The Telavāha is mentioned in the *Jātaka* (i, p. 111) as a river in the Serivaraṭṭha near Andhapura.

## CHAPTER II

### KINGS AND PEOPLES

The *Dīgha Nikāya* contains this prophecy of the Buddha that when the advent of the future Buddha, Metteyya, will take place on earth, 'Jambudīpa will be pervaded by mankind even as a jungle is by reeds and rushes'.<sup>1</sup> The 'teeming millions of India' is indeed an oft-recurring phrase of the present day. In dealing with the peoples of Jambudīpa we are not, however, to deal with the teeming millions of India as such but only as divided into various tribes or nations ruling themselves or being ruled by kings. By way of a general description of the ninth dvīpa of the Bhāratavarṣa, i.e., of India proper, the *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa* locates the Kirātas in the eastern (better, north-eastern) extremity, the Yavanas in the western (better, north-western),<sup>2</sup> and the rest of the peoples in the remaining parts of India.

As for the Himalayan region, the Purāṇas refer the Kinnaras to the Haimavatavarṣa, the Kimpuruṣas to the Hemakūṭavarṣa and the Yakkas to some regions, the main home of the

---

<sup>1</sup> *Dīgha*, iii, p. 75.

<sup>2</sup> *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa*, Chap. 57: Pūrve kirātā yasyānte, pāscime Yavanāḥ smṛtāḥ.

## KINGS AND PEOPLES

Yakṣas being Uttarakuṇḍa or Northern continent forming the kingdom of Kuvera Vaiśravaṇa. The Kinnaras, Kimpuruṣas and Yakṣas<sup>1</sup> figure as semi-human beings, the first two representing the two branches of one and the same stock of people. This is in substance and details the description of them as offered in the early texts of Buddhism.

The words, Kinnara and Kimpurisa, are employed in Pali, precisely as in Sanskrit, as synonyms.<sup>2</sup> According to the *Amarakoṣa*, the Kinnaras or Kimpuruṣas have a human form which is ugly because of having a face like that of a horse, and are, therefore, known also as aśvamukhāḥ or turāṅgavadaṇā; the heavenly musician, Tumbaru, belongs to the race of Kinnaras or Kimpuruṣas.<sup>3</sup> In Pali, on the other hand, the heavenly musician is represented by Pañcasikha who belongs to a class of demigods called Gandhabbā. As the Kinnaras or Kimpurisas figure in the Pali Jātakas, they were rather of a human or infrahuman race<sup>4</sup> than of a suprahuman origin. Like the deer, they

---

<sup>1</sup> Kern, *Manual of Indian Buddhism*, pp. 59-60.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 252f.

<sup>3</sup> *Amarakoṣa*, Svargavarga, 71: *Kinnarāḥ Kimpuruṣas turāṅga-vadaṇo mayuh.*

<sup>4</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 252: *Na-yime devā na pi Gandhabbaputtā, migā ime tiracchānagatā*; iv, p. 439: *migā manuseśā, vā nibhāsa-vapnā*, ‘animals in a human form’.

lived on leaves, flowers and fruits of trees<sup>1</sup> and put on garments of leaves or of flowers.<sup>2</sup> They preferred to live in a beautiful hilly region along the banks of rivers, dwelling on the summit of hills during the rains and on the river banks during summer.<sup>3</sup> They were timorous and shy by their nature, particularly afraid of the currents of water (*udakabhītā*). They were very playful, amusing and enchanting, fond of music and noted for their romantic conjugal love and fidelity.<sup>4</sup> They were to be found in all the Himalayan ranges up to the *Gandhamādana*.<sup>5</sup> To the hunters they were known as *Kimpurisas*.<sup>6</sup> They possessed excellent health and their span of life was one hundred years.<sup>7</sup>

The Yavanas who are assigned in the *Märkandeya Purāṇa* to the north-western extremity of India are known as *Yonas* in Pali<sup>8</sup> and *Yaunas* in the Great Epic.<sup>9</sup> The *Yonas* are grouped, precisely as in Aśoka's Rock Edicts,<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1, 2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, pp. 283, 286.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 283: *Candapabbatavāsino Kinnarā vassārattasamaye anotaritivā pabbate yeva vasanti, nidāghe otaranti.*

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 439.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 438f.: *Mallamgirī Pañdarakamp Tikūṭamp sitodiyā anuvicarāma naggio; Apadāna*, i, p. 265f.: *Candabhāgñanadītire ahosirp kinnaro tadā | pupphabhakko . . . pupphānam vasano||*

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 439: *jānanti no Kimpurisā ca luddā.*

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 441.

<sup>8</sup> *Mañjūḥīma*, ii, p. 149.

<sup>9</sup> *Mahābhāgavata*, xii, 207.43.

<sup>10</sup> R.E., V and XIII.

with the Kambojas and Gandhāras. As for the Yonas, they were originally the people who came from Ionia. But the Macedonian and Bactrian Greeks, too, have been represented by the same name in all branches of Indian literature. The Yonas mentioned in the canonical Pali texts together with the Kambojas and Gandhāras may be presumed to have settled down subsequently in the extreme north-western part of India retaining their old customs and manners and maintaining their old religious beliefs. That they tried to maintain their separate entity as a people in these two respects is well attested by the evidence of all literary and epigraphical documents.<sup>1</sup>

In the Epics<sup>2</sup> as well as in some of the later Buddhist texts,<sup>3</sup> the Yavanas are associated with the Śakas. In the *Rāmāyaṇa* (iv, 43.11-12), as pointed out by Dr. Raychaudhuri, the Yavanas are placed between the country of the Kurus and the Madras, and the Himalayas.<sup>4</sup> The Bactrian king Milinda is said to have been born in a village in the island of Alasanda (Alexandria) with which the memory of the Yonas as Macedonian Greeks remained associated.<sup>5</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, p. 149.

<sup>2</sup> *Rāmāyaṇa*, iv, 43.11-12; *Mahābhārata*, i, 54.21.

<sup>3</sup> E.g., the *Mahāvibhāṣā-sāstra*.

<sup>4</sup> *Political History*, 4th ed., p. 3.

<sup>5</sup> Kalasigāma is the name of the locality mentioned in the *Milindapañha*, p. 83.

Yonas or Yonakas as Bactrian Greeks founded principalities in this very region of India establishing their suzerainty even over Mathurā<sup>1</sup> in the south-east and over Surāṣṭra<sup>2</sup> and Besnagar (Vessanagara near Vedisa).<sup>3</sup> When the Sakas (Scythians) invaded Uttarāpatha and established themselves there, the Yonas or Bactrians and other Greeks appear to have made political and matrimonial alliances with them.

The Yonas as the Ionian Greek settlers figure in Asokan records, precisely as in the Pali Suttas, as semi-independent or independent tribes. But the Yonas as the Bactrian Greeks were all along ruled by the monarchs of their own. They adhered, in their official documents at least, not only to their national language (Yavana-bhāsā) but also to their national alphabet (Yavana-lipi).

The *Mahābhārata* (xii, 207.43) introduces the Kāmbojas (Pali Kambojas) along with the Yaunas, Gandhāras, Kirātas and Barbaras as peoples of Uttarāpatha (Uttarāpathajanmānah). The constant association of them with the Gandhāras and Yaunas in the Great Epic, the Pali texts and the early Indian inscriptions

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Hāthigumpha Inscription of Khāravela: Madhuram apayāto Yavana-rājā.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Junagarh Rock Inscription of Rudradāman I.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Besnagar Garuda-pilar Inscription of Heliodorus.

may be taken to suggest that they settled down and founded their territory somewhere near Gandhāra. According to the *Mahābhārata* (vii, 4.5), they had undoubtedly their capital at Rājapura,<sup>1</sup> a place which Hiuen Tsang locates to the south or south-east of Punach.<sup>2</sup> Dr. Raychaudhuri points out that the western boundaries of their territory must have reached Kafiristan in which district the three distinct tribes, namely, Caumojee, Camoze and Camoje remind us of the Kambojas.<sup>3</sup> Their country stood evidently on a trade-route connecting it with Dvārakā.<sup>4</sup> It was the habitat of good horses (*assānam āyatanam*).<sup>5</sup> As described in the Pali *Assalāyana Sutta*, the Yonas and Kambojas had the same kind of social organisation.<sup>6</sup> The Kambojas were considered barbarous.<sup>7</sup> They had an independent or semi-independent tribal form of government.

The Jaina canonical texts mention the Cirātas (Pali and Sk. Kirātas) as a people without any details about them. In one of the Nāgārjunikonda inscriptions, the Cirātas are associated

<sup>1</sup> Rājapuram gatvā Kāmbojā nirjitā-stvayā.

<sup>2</sup> Watters, *op. cit.*, i, 284.

<sup>3</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., p. 126; *JRAS.*, 1912, p. 255.

<sup>4</sup> *Petavatthu*, p. 23.

<sup>5</sup> *Sumangalavilāsinī*, i, p. 124.

<sup>6</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, p. 149.

<sup>7</sup> *Jātaka*, vi, pp. 208, 210.

with the Cīnas.<sup>1</sup> The *Apadāna* speaks of the Cīnas and Babbaras, the former being described as a people who came to Hāṃsavatī on the Ganges from a distant land (ārā va Cīnaraṭṭhā ca āgacchanti).<sup>2</sup> The Barbaras and Kirātas are placed in the Great Epic in the Uttarāpatha along with the Yaunas, Kāmbojas and Gāndhāras.<sup>3</sup> The Kirātas find mention in the Pali commentaries as 'a tribe of jungle men'. Their dialect is 'classed with those of the Ottas (Oḍḍas), the Andhakas, the Yonakas and the Damiḷas'. These are all recorded as languages of the Milakkhas<sup>4</sup> (Milakkhanam bhāsā) that were thirteen in number<sup>5</sup> according to the *Jambudīva-paññatti*. From Pali and Sanskrit sources it may be concluded that the Kirātas had their settlements not only in the north-east and north-west extremities of Northern India but also in other parts of India.

The Gandhāras after whom the land where they settled down was named were one of the ancient peoples of India—the Gandhāris mentioned in the Vedas.<sup>6</sup> In the Purāṇas they are described as descendants of the Druhyas, who were, according to the Vedic tradition, a north-

<sup>1</sup> *E I.*, vol. xx, Pt. I.

<sup>2</sup> *Apadāna*, ii, pp. 358-359.

<sup>3</sup> *Mahābhārata*, xii, 207.43.

<sup>4</sup> *Sumanangalavīḍeśī*, i, p. 176.

<sup>5</sup> Eighteen, according to the *Sammoхavinodati*, p. 388.

<sup>6</sup> *Rgveda*, i, 129.7; *Atharvaveda*, v, 22.14.

western people. In the Jātakas and the Epic, Gandhāra is described as a kingdom with Takkasilā (Sk. Takṣaśilā) as its capital and Puṣkalāvatī or Puṣkarāvatī or Utpalāvatī as one among its other chief towns. The Kumbhakāra Jātaka preserves the tradition of Naggaji (Sk. Nagñajit), a famous ancient king of Gandhāra, who was a contemporary of Nimi, king of Videha, Dummukha, king of Pañchāla,<sup>1</sup> and Bhīma, king of Vidabbha,<sup>2</sup> and Karandū or Karakandū, king of Kalinga. In a few other instances the rulers of Gandhāra are introduced simply as Gandhārarājā.<sup>3</sup> Situated at a vulnerable point of attacks from the south-east, south-west and north-west, Gandhāra passed hands several times, retaining its independence from time to time. It was conquered once by king Janamejaya of Kuru, while in the latter half of the 6th century B.C., it became included in the empire of Darius, the Achaemenid king of Iran.<sup>4</sup> We are told by Buddhaghosa that king Pukkusāti was reigning in Gandhāra as a contemporary of king Bimbisāra of Magadha, and that there was a friendly relation between them.<sup>5</sup> At the time of Alexander's

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Uttarādhyayana Sūtra*, xviii, p. 45; *Jātaka*, iii, p. 377.

<sup>2</sup> *Aitareya Br.*, vii, 34.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, i, p. 191; ii, p. 219; iii, p. 364; iv, p. 98.

<sup>4</sup> See Behistun inscription of Darius.

<sup>5</sup> *Papāñcasūdanī* (Sinhalese ed.), ii, 982.

invasion of India in B.C. 327, the kingdom was ruled over by Taxiles (Tāksaśilā) who was succeeded by his son Mophis or Omphis (Sk. Āmbhi). As the *Divyāvadāna*<sup>1</sup> and Aśoka's Rock Edicts (V and XIII) attest, Gandhāra was included in the Maurya empire, the Gandhāras as a people enjoying some degree of independence along with their neighbours, the Yonas and Kambojas. According to the *Mahāniddesa* (vol. i, p. 154), Takkasilā was one of the great centres of trade, while the R̥gveda bears testimony to the good wool of the sheep of the Gandhāris. The local script of the Gandhāras was Kharoṣṭhī which was in use in that part of Eastern Turkistan where the people of Gandhāra founded a colony.

The Maddas (Sk. Madras) as a people founded their territory in the central Punjab with Sāgala or Śākala (modern Sialkot) as their capital. Sāgala was the capital of king Milinda (Menander) when he ruled over the kingdom of Madda. The Maddas find mention not only in the Jātakas and Epics but also in the *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*. This Vedic text (viii, 14.3) speaks of the Uttarākuravas and Uttaramadras as two peoples who had established a special kind of sovereignty called *vairājya* and lived in countries beyond the Himavanta. The existence of an

<sup>1</sup> *Divyāvadāna*, p. 61.

Uttaramadda side by side with that of Uttarakuru is proved also by the Pali commentaries that tell us that the queen of a king overlord is a princess either from Uttarakuru or from the royal house of Madda.<sup>1</sup> Thus we are led to think that, like the Kurus, the Maddas were originally a trans-Himalayan people. As in their original home, so when they migrated to India, they settled down in the Punjab as neighbours of the Kurus. Even their Indian territory which is strictly speaking the southern Madda was equally noted for the beauty of their women (*Maddaraṭṭham nāma itthāgāro*).<sup>2</sup> We have mention in the Jātakas and in the Epics of matrimonial alliances between the royal house of Madda on one side and those of Sivi, Kuru, Kāśī, Kośala and Kalinga<sup>3</sup> on the other, in each instance, the princess belonging to the former. The Maddas lived under a monarchical form of government and their capital Sāgala was an emporium of trade and one of the most flourishing cities.<sup>4</sup>

The Kekayas, Kekakas or Kekas find mention in the Jātakas as one of the ancient peoples of

<sup>1</sup> *Papañcasūdanī*, ii, p. 950; *Sumanagalavilāsini*, ii, p. 626; *Paramatthajoritikā*, I, p. 173.

<sup>2</sup> *Theragāthā-attrahakathā*, ii, p. 142; *Therigāthā-attrahakathā*, p. 68.

<sup>3</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 54. According to the *Mahābhārata*, the mother of Janamejaya, king of Kuru, and according to the *Ramāyāna*, one of the three queens of king Daśaratha of Kośala, were princesses from the Royal House of Madra.

<sup>4</sup> *Milindapanha*, pp. 1-2.

India who evidently founded two territories, one in Uttarāpatha and the other in Mahimsakarattha. In the Purāṇas they are mentioned as one of the three septs of the family of Anu, son of Yayāti, the other two being represented by the Uśinaras and the Madras.<sup>1</sup> According to the *Rāmāyaṇa*, the Kekayas of Uttarāpatha settled down in a territory between the Vipāśā (Beas) and the kingdom of Gandharva or Gandhāra.<sup>2</sup> Their capital was Rājagrha or Girivraja which is identified by Cunningham with Girjāk or Jalalpur on the Jhelum. The name of their capital is not met with in the Vedic texts. According to the Jātaka tradition, the kingdom and capital of the Kekayas were named Kekaka after them, their capital ranking among the three principal cities in Jambudipa, the other two being Uttarapañcāla and Indapatta.<sup>3</sup> The Sarabhaṅga and Saṅkicca Jātakas preserve the tradition of Ajjuna, a very powerful but wicked king of the Kekayas in the Mahimsakarattha.<sup>4</sup> It is probable that the Kekaya kings mentioned in some of the Amarāvati and Nāgārjunikonda inscriptions were descendants of the Kekayas who founded a kingdom

<sup>1</sup> *Matsya*, 48.10–20, *Vāyu*, 99.12–23; Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., p. 53.

<sup>2</sup> *Rāmāyaṇa*, II, 67.7, II, 68.22.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, II, p. 213.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.* v. nn. 145, 273.

in the Deccan. The *Rāmāyaṇa* speaks of a matrimonial alliance between the royal houses of Kośala and Kekaya in Uttarāpatha. We learn from Jain sources that one half of the Kekaya kingdom was Aryan and the Kekaya city was known as Seyaviyā.<sup>1</sup>

The Sivis are mentioned in the Jātakas as another ancient people of India who settled down in Uttarāpatha. There is a discrepancy between Sivi and Vessantara Jātakas, as regards the name of the capital of their kingdom, the former calling it Aritṭhapura<sup>2</sup> and the latter Jetuttara.<sup>3</sup> The fact seems to be that the two Jātakas speak of two different kingdoms, one with its capital at Aritṭhapura and the other with Jetuttara as its chief town. The second territory is placed to the south of the Cetarāṭṭha at a distance of thirty yojanas. Just to the north of the city of Jetuttara stood a mountain called Suvañṇagiritāla. Between this mountain in the south and the mountain, Arañjaragiri, in the north, flowed a river by the name of Kontimārā. The way from Jetuttara to the Vaṅka mountain in the Himavanta lay through the Cetarāṭṭha across the river Kontimārā.<sup>4</sup> The Nimi Jātaka mentions a king named Usinara

<sup>1</sup> *Indian Antiquary*, 1891, p. 375.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, 401; v, 210; vi, 419.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, vi, p. 480.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, vi, p. 514.

and his son Śivi without giving any hint as to their connection with the Śivi people or kingdom.<sup>1</sup> The connection is made clear in the *Mahābhārata* (iii, 130.131) which definitely speaks of a Śivi kingdom ruled by king Uśinara, 'which lay not far from the Yamunā'.<sup>2</sup> Patañjali in his comment on Pāṇini's rule (iv, 2.2), mentions a locality in the north-western India by the name of Śivapura which is apparently the same place as Śivipura mentioned in a Shorkot inscription.<sup>3</sup> Thus we may agree with Dr. Vogel in thinking that the Shorkot region was once the site of a city of the Śivos. The people of this part of Uttarāpatha were known to the Greek historians as Siboi, equipped with 40,000 foot-soldiers at the time of Alexander's invasion, dressing themselves with the skins of wild beasts and having clubs for their weapons.<sup>4</sup>

The Khuddakas (Greek Sudraccæ or Oxydrakai, Sk. Kṣudrakā), Suddakas (Greek Sodrai), Rohanas and Sindhavas are four other tribes or peoples of Uttarāpatha who find mention in the *Apadāna* (ii, p. 359). Of them, the first founded a territory between the Hydraotes (Ravi) and Hyphasis (Bias), and

<sup>1</sup> *Jdlaka*, vi, p. 95f.

<sup>2</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., p. 205.

<sup>3</sup> E.I., 1921, p. 16.

<sup>4</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., p. 204.

figured as 'one of the most numerous and warlike of all the Indian tribes in the Punjab' at the time of Alexander's invasion. The second is invariably associated in the Great Epic (vii, 19.6; ix, 37.1) with the Abhiras who lived near the Sarasvati. Apart from their association with the Sindhavas in the *Apadāna*, nothing further is as yet known of the Rohanas as a tribe or people. They were probably the Indian people in Uttarāpatha who formed a settlement in Ceylon 'comprising the south-eastern part of the island', though, according to the chronicles of Ceylon, the kingdom of Rohana was founded by a Sakyān prince.<sup>1</sup> The Sindhavas, as their name implies, were a tribe or people who settled down in a valley of the Indus and founded a territory which has been known as Sindhu or Sind. This territory is constantly associated in the early Pali texts with that of the Sauvīras between the Indus and the Jhelum.

The Kurus are described by Buddhaghosa as a people who had migrated in large numbers from Uttarākuru to Jambudvipa and founded a kingdom which was named Kuru after them.<sup>2</sup> The Kuru kingdom which was 300 leagues in extent comprised several districts, towns and villages, and its capital, Indapatta (Sk. Indraprastha near the modern Delhi) was seven

<sup>1</sup> *Mahāvamsa*, ix, 10.

<sup>2</sup> *Papāñcasūdāni*, i, 184

leagues in circuit. Hastināpura (Pali Hatthipura),<sup>1</sup> known, in earlier times as Āsandīvat, appears to have been the earlier capital. On this point Dr. Raychaudhuri observes: 'The evidence of the Vedic texts and that of the Purāṇas can be reconciled if we assume that, after the death of Janamejaya, the Kuru kingdom was split up into several parts. One part, which had its capital at Hastināpura, was ruled by the direct descendants of Janamejaya himself. Another part was ruled by the descendants of his brother Kakṣasena. The junior branch probably resided at Indraprastha or Indapatta . . . . which probably continued to be the seat of kings claiming to belong to the Yudhiṣṭhilagotta (Yudhiṣṭhira-gotra), long after the destruction of Hastināpura, and the removal of the elder line of Kuru kings to Kausāmbī'.<sup>2</sup> It is, however, difficult to reconcile such an assumption as this with the Jātaka tradition, according to which, Ajjuna or Dhanañjaya Koravya of the stock of Yudhiṣṭhila, with Vidhurapāṇḍita as his wise counsellor, reigned in the Kuru country when its capital was at Indapatta.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, the Kunāla Jātaka preserves a tradition of the five Pāṇḍava brothers (Pāṇḍurājaputtā), Ajjuna,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Apadāna*, ii, p. 359.

<sup>2</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., pp. 37-38.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 57f.; vi, p. 255.

Nakula, Bhīmasena, Yudhiṣṭhila and Sahadeva, all of whom were chosen as husbands at the same time by Kaṇhā (Sk. Kṛṣṇā, another name for Draupadī according to the Great Epic), the only daughter and only child of the king of Kāśī. It speaks of them without reference to any kingdom and applies the epithet of *rājā* only to Sahadeva. The Jātakas have nothing to say with regard to the war of the Pāṇḍavas with the Kauravas. They tell us nothing also about the matrimonial alliance of the Pāṇḍavas with the Andhaka-Vṛṣnis or Yādavas. Evidently the Kuru king Ajjuna of the family of Yudhiṣṭhila had nothing to do with Ajjuna and Yudhiṣṭhila among the five Pāṇḍava brothers. In the *Mahāvāṃsa* (vii, 50, 69, 72), by the term Pañdurājā is meant the king of Pāṇḍya in South India with Madhurā (modern Madoura) as its capital. The Jātakas are silent as to the connection of Pañdurājā, the ancestor of the Pāṇḍavas, with any kingdom in Northern or Southern India having Madhurā for its capital. They are eloquent in praise of king Ajjuna during whose reign the Kuru country was an ideal kingdom, ruled most righteously and noted for virtue.<sup>1</sup> His family chaplain was a Brahmin of pure conduct by the name of Sucirata and

---

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Kurudhamma Jātaka* (No. 276), Dhūmakārī (413), Sambhava 515, Vidhurapandita (545).

he alone seems to have deserved the epithet of Koravya.<sup>1</sup>

It seems that the next king in the line of Ajjuna was Sutasoma who is introduced as the son of king Koravya of the Kuru realm and who became so very fond of eating human flesh that he was compelled at last to abdicate his throne and walk out of his realm.<sup>2</sup>

When the Kuru country included in it Uttarapañcāla, a king by the name of Renu reigned in the city of Uttarapañcāla, and Prince Somanassa was his son.<sup>3</sup>

There was a time when Kuru, Pañcāla and Kekaya were 'three of the most powerful kingdoms' in Jambudvīpa.<sup>4</sup> But in the Buddha's time the Kuru country was being ruled only by a titular chieftain called Koravya, and evidently had very little political importance of its own.<sup>5</sup> The people of Kuru continued nevertheless to enjoy their ancient reputation for 'deep wisdom and sound health'.<sup>6</sup>

The Pañcālas founded a kingdom contiguous to that of the Kurus. The Pañcāla country was divided by the Ganges into two parts, Uttara and Dakkhīna, each forming a kingdom

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 361.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 457f.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 444f.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 214.

<sup>5</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, p. 65f.

<sup>6</sup> *Papācasūdāni*, i, p. 184f.

by itself. Like the Jātakas, the *Divyāvadāna* and the *Mahābhārata* speak of the two divisions of their realm. According to the Kumbhakāra Jātaka, when king Dummukha, a contemporary of king Naggaṇī of Gandhāra, reigned in Uttara-pañcāla, its capital was Kampilla (Sk. Kāmpilya),<sup>1</sup> while according to the *Divyāvadāna* (p. 435), at one time its capital was Hastināpura, the well-known chief city of the Kurus. The *Mahābhārata*, on the other hand, definitely mentions Kāmpilya as the capital of Dakṣiṇa-pañcāla, and Ahicchatrā or Chatravatī as that of the Uttara. According to the Great Epic, the division of the Pañcāla kingdom into Northern and Southern was effected in fulfilment of a treaty between the king of Pañcāla and that of Kuru, after the former had been snatched away by the latter. The fact, however, seems to be that the two peoples were on a state of war with each other from time to time, at one time the Pañcālas annexing a portion of the Kuru country to their realm, and at another, the Kurus establishing their supremacy over the northern division of Pañcāla.<sup>2</sup> At all events, the Somanassa Jātaka definitely states that once upon a time Uttarapañcāla was included in the Kuru realm.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, iii, 379.

<sup>2</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 18f.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 444.

In the Jātakas we have mention of three other kings of Pañcāla, namely, one whose son was the valiant prince Jayaddisa;<sup>1</sup> secondly, Brahmadatta who oppressed his subjects with taxes and tyranny;<sup>2</sup> and thirdly, Cūlāṇī Brahmadatta who partly succeeded in subduing the then king of Videha by a well-plotted stratagem.<sup>3</sup> King Cūlāṇī Brahmadatta finds mention in the *Rāmāyaṇa* (i, 32), the Jaina *Uttarādhyayana Sūtra* (xiii, 1) and the *Svapna-vāsavadattā* (Act V). Even in the Buddha's time Pañcāla was being ruled by a king of its own, although like the Kuru realm, it lost its political importance. If it be correct to think that the Pañcālas were originally the same people as the Krivis who find mention in the Vedic texts, we can say that they settled at first on the Sindhu and the Asikni (Chenāb) and that their country was divided as Western and Eastern instead of Northern and Southern.<sup>4</sup>

In the *Anguttara Nikāya*, as noted before, the country of Maccha (Sk. Matsya) is included, together with its people, in the traditional list of sixteen mahājanapadas. In this and other Pali lists the Macchas as a people are usually associated with the Sūrāseṇas, while in the Vidhurapandita Jātaka they are said to have witnessed the contest at a game of dice between

---

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 21f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, v, p. 98f.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, vi, p. 294.

<sup>4</sup> *Vedic Index*, i, p. 469.

the Kuru king Dhanañjaya or Ajjuna and Punṇaka the Yakkha. This may lead one to think that the Macchas had formed an alliance with their neighbours, the Kurus and the Sūrasenas. According to the *Mahābhārata*, the Matsya country was then ruled by king Virāṭa who was an ally of the Kurus. Its capital Virāṭanagara was evidently named after king Virāṭa of the Epic fame. The Macchas as a people had no political importance in the Buddha's time.

Over and above the usual association of the Sūrasenas (Sk. Sūrasenas, Greek Sourasenoi) in the Pali canonical lists of the mahājanapadas, the Vidhurapandita Jātaka speaks of an occasion when the Sūrasenas were present in the Kuru court in the city of Indapatta along with the Macchas, Maddas and Pañcālas. If any historical inference is to be drawn from these combinations, it would be that they were all neighbours and that their realms stood close to one another. Their capital, Madhurā (Sk. Mathurā) on the right bank of the Yamunā stood midway between Indapatta and Kosambi on the same river. Strictly speaking, it is the Uttaramadhurā which is identified with Maholi, five miles to the south-west of the present town of Mathurā or Muttra.<sup>1</sup> From Samkissa (Sk.

Samkāśya) on the Ganges the distance of Northern Madhurā is said to have been four yojanas only.<sup>1</sup> According to the Ghata Jātaka, once upon a time king Mahāsāgara reigned in Uttaramadhurā.<sup>2</sup> He had two sons, Sāgara and Upasāgara of whom the former succeeded his father to the throne and the latter became the uparājā or viceroy. Mahāsāgara's contemporary was king Mahākāmsa of Kamsabhoga<sup>3</sup> in Uttarāpatha with his capital at Asitajana, a place which has not as yet been identified. Mahākāmsa was succeeded to the throne by his elder son, Kamsa, whose younger brother Upakāmsa became his viceroy. There was a matrimonial alliance between the royal houses of Uttaramadhurā and Kamsabhoga, Prince Upasāgara marrying Kamsa brothers' sister Devagabbhā (Sk. Devakī) who became the mother of Vāsudeva, his nine brothers and one sister. Among the contemporaries of Sāgara and Kamsa, the Ghata Jātaka mentions the name of Kālasena who was at that time reigning in the city of Ayojjhā (Sk. Ayodhyā), which was undoubtedly the earlier capital of Kośala. The village of Govāḍdhana (Sk. Govardhana) in the

<sup>1</sup> Kaccāyana's *Pali Grammar*, edited by S. C. Vidyābhūṣāṇa, Book III, Ch. I, p. 157.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 81.

<sup>3</sup> It is difficult to agree with Malalasekera in thinking that Kamsabhoga or Kamsabhoja was probably the same country as Kamboja.

kingdom of Kamsa was offered to Upasāgara as a wedding present. In the Buddha's time the ruler of the Sūrasenas, as his name implies, was a prince born of a princess married by the king of Sūrasena from the royal house of Avanti.<sup>1</sup> When Megasthenes wrote about the Sūrasenas, their country must have been included in the Maurya empire, and after the Mauryas, their capital Madhurā came under the sway of the Bactrian Greeks and the Kuśānas. Whether their country formed a Śunga dominion or not is still a disputed point. The memory of the Sūrasenas as a people remains associated with a distinct form of Prākrit dialects named Śaurasenī after them or their country.

The Ghata Jātaka seems to present a distorted version of the legend of Vāsudeva and his brothers, described as *Andhakavēṇhudāsaputtā dasabhātikā*, the ten brothers who passed as the sons of Andhakaviṣṇu, husband of Nandagopā, their foster-mother. In it Vāsudeva is otherwise called Kañha (Sk. Kṛṣṇa) and Kesava (Sk. Keśava), which is quite compatible with the account given in the Great Epic and the Purāṇas. It records the names of Vāsudeva's nine brothers as Baladeva, Candadeva, Suriyadeva, Aggideva, Varuṇadeva, Ajjuna, Pajjuna (Sk. Pradyumna), Ghatapāṇḍita and Añkura. The

---

<sup>1</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, p. 83f.

first child of their mother Devagabbhā (Devakī) was a daughter named Añjanādevī. Devagabbhā is represented as the sister of king Kamsa whom the *Jātaka* connects with Kamsabhoga instead of Madhurā. The ten brothers who grew up as powerful wrestlers and valiant warriors became ambitious to establish their paramount sovereignty over the whole of Jambudvīpa. The first kingdom they seized was that of Uttaramadhurā. Next they directed their attention to Kamsabhoga. After making themselves masters of Kamsabhoga, and gradually defeating and killing the kings of sixty-three thousand realms, they began to reign in the city of Dyāravatī or Dvārakā which stood on the sea and had a hill by its side. They divided their empire into ten dominions that were allotted to the ten brothers, the youngest brother parting with his share in favour of their sister Añjanādevī. The sons of the ten brothers perished by the curse of the sage Kanhadīpāyana whom they had insulted and killed, and they themselves met with a tragic end, the account of which is in substance the same as that given in the Mausala-parva of the Great Epic. But according to the Mahāummagga *Jātaka*, Vāsudeva's son, Sivi, by a Cāndāla woman, named Jambavatī, continued to reign in Dvāravatī.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, vi, p. 421.

The Pali *Andhakavēṇhu*, offered as the personal name of Vāsudeva brothers' foster-father, is only a wrong Prakrit form of the Sk. Andhaka-Vṛṣnis who represented two out of the four branches of the Sātvatas, the other two being the Daivāvṛdhas and the Mahābhajas. The Sātvatas themselves were one of the septs of the Yādavas. According to the *Mahābhārata* and the *Purāṇas*, the ruling family of Mathurā belonged to the race of Yadu. Kṛṣṇa-Vāsudeva and his brothers wore Andhaka-Vṛṣnis or Yādavas. The connection of Kṛṣṇa with the land of the Sūrasenas is confirmed also by the Greek writers who mention Methora (Mathurā) and Cleisobora (Kṛṣnapura) as two of their important cities. Dr. Raychaudhuri rightly observes: 'The Andhakas and Vṛṣnis are referred to in the *Aṣṭādhyāyī* of Pāṇini (iv, 1.114; vi, 2.34). In Kauṭilya's *Arthaśāstra* the Vṛṣnis are described as a Saṅgha, i.e., a republican corporation. The *Mahābhārata*, too, refers to the Vṛṣnis, Andhakas and other associate tribes as a Saṅgha (xii, 81.25) and Vāsudeva as a Saṅghamukhya.'<sup>1</sup>

The early Jaina and Buddhist texts have very little to say regarding the Avantīs as a people. According to the *Mahāgovinda Suttanta*, when the empire of Renu, probably a powerful

---

<sup>1</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., p. 118

Videhan king, was divided into seven sub-kingdoms, the kingdom of Avanti fell to the share of Vessabhū, counted as one of the seven contemporary kings of the line of Bharata.<sup>1</sup> Māhissati (Sk. Māhismatī) was then the capital of this kingdom. But the Pali canonical texts mention Ujjeni (Sk. Ujjayinī) as the capital of Cāndapajjota, the king of Avanti in the time of Mahāvīra and the Buddha. Professor D. R. Bhandarkar seeks to account for this discrepancy by the assumption that the country of the Avantis was divided into two kingdoms, one placed in the Dakkhināpatha having Māhissati for its capital, and the other, i.e., the northern kingdom having its capital at Ujjeni.<sup>2</sup> This explanation has not so far been disputed.

As for the Avantis as a people, the *Matsya Purāṇa* counts them among the five branches of the Haihayas, the other four being represented by the Vitihotras, Bhojas, Kundikeras or Tundikeras and Tālajaṅghas.<sup>3</sup> According to the *Matsya*<sup>4</sup> and *Vāyu*<sup>5</sup> Purāṇas, the first dynasty of Māhismatī<sup>6</sup> was of the Haihaya family. The Haihayas, mentioned also in the *Arthaśāstra*, established themselves in that part of India by

<sup>1</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 236.

<sup>2</sup> *Garnier's Lectures*, 1918, p. 54.

<sup>3</sup> *Matsya*, 43.48-9.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, 43.8-20.

<sup>5</sup> *Vāyu*, 94.5-26.

<sup>6</sup> JRAS., 1916, p. 867—Pargiter's note deserves consideration.

overthrowing the Nāgas of the Narmadā region. The Haihayas and their descendants, the Avantis, Bhojas, and the rest, were all originally of the Sātvata race.<sup>1</sup>

The pedigree of king Caṇḍapajjota of Avantī is nowhere given in Pali or Ardhamāgadhī. According to the Purāṇas, however, his father was Pulika who killed his master, the then reigning king of Avantī and anointed his son, Pradyota by force. Pradyota who subdued all neighbouring kings was 'destitute of good policy.' He reigned for 23 years and was succeeded by five kings who reigned for 138 years.<sup>2</sup> His son and successor was Pālaka whose reign served as data for fixing the date of Mahāvīra's demise. Thus in the time of Mahāvīra and the Buddha, Caṇḍapajjota or Pajjota was the powerful monarch of Avantī who had three sons and a daughter named Vāsuladattā (Sk. Vāsavadattā). Vāsuladattā eloped with king Udena of the Vaccha realm. Within a century and a half from the death of Pajjota, the country of the Avantis became merged in the Maurya empire.

The Jātakas speak of sixteen Bhojaputtas.<sup>3</sup> But they tell us nothing as to the countries where the sixteen branches of the Bhojas resided

<sup>1</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., p. 23.

<sup>2</sup> Pargiter, *Dynasties of the Kali Age*, pp. 18, 68.

<sup>3</sup> *Samyutta*, i, 61-62; *Jātaka*, i, p. 45; Law, *Geography*, p. 62.

or founded their territories. The Bhojas were, even according to the *Aitareya* and *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇas*, one of the septs of the Sātvatas. Bhima, the king of Vidabbha (modern Berar), was no doubt a Bhoja king. The Sarabhaṅga Jātaka<sup>1</sup> preserves the tradition of the powerful king Dāṇḍakī of the kingdom of Dāṇḍaka in the Vindhya region, who had his capital at the city of Kumbhavatī. The sovereignty of Dāṇḍaka was established over the whole of the Vindhya region, extending as it did from Vidabbha to Kalinga. Kālinga, the king of Kalinga, Atṭhaka, the king of Atṭhaka and Bhimaratha, presumably the king of Vidabbha, acknowledged his supremacy. The kingdom of Dāṇḍakī was utterly destroyed by a natural catastrophe. Dāṇḍakī or Dāṇḍakya was undoubtedly a Bhoja king.<sup>2</sup> In the fifth and thirteenth Rock Edicts of Aśoka, the Raṭhikas, Bhojakas and Pitinikas, all of whom may be supposed to have belonged to the Sātvata race, are mentioned as semi-independent ruling peoples of Aparānta. In the Hāthigumphā Inscription of Khāravela the Rathikas and Bhojakas are introduced in such a manner as to leave no room for doubt that they were ruling chiefs of the Vidyādhara settlements (*Vijādharādhivāsā*).

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, v, pp. 134, 287ff., *Majjhima*, i, p. 378; *Mahāvastu*, iii, p. 363f.

<sup>2</sup> *Arthaśāstra*, Śhamasāstri's Tr., p. 12.

The *Jambudīva-pannatti*, as noted before, connects the Vidyādharas with the Vaitādhyas or Vindhya range and speaks of their eighteen settlements. When the Jātakas speak of sixteen Bhojaputtas, one may understand that they were the ruling chiefs of sixteen Vidyādhara tracts along the Vindhya. From these references, both in literature and in inscriptions, it may be inferred that the Vidyādharas were not mythical beings but some aboriginal tribes that settled along the Vindhya.

The Assakas (Sk. Aśvakas, Aśmakas) find mention as a distinct people of India in early Pali texts, in Pāṇini's grammar, and in the *Mahābhārata*, *Bṛhatsaṃhitā*, and *Purāṇas*. The Greek writers knew them as Assakenus whose territory was situated in the Swat Valley. In the *Mārkanadeya Purāṇa*, they are placed in Uttarāpatha. Pāṇini's reference, too, must have been to a people in Uttarāpatha.<sup>1</sup> But the early Pali texts are concerned only with those Assakas who founded a territory in the Dakkhināpatha which lay contiguous to the kingdom of the Avantis<sup>2</sup> and on the south bank of the Godāvari.<sup>3</sup> The capital of this southern kingdom was Potana<sup>4</sup> (Sk. Paudanya) or Potali.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Geography*, p. 21.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 317.

<sup>3</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, verse 977.

<sup>4</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 235.

<sup>5</sup> *Jātaka*, ii, p. 155.

It was included at one time, in the past, in the empire of Renu and was ruled by Brahmadatta<sup>1</sup> who must have been a prince of the royal family of Kāśī. At another time, as stated in the Assaka Jātaka, the Assaka kingdom formed an integral part of the empire of Kāśī.<sup>2</sup> In this instance, the *Jātaka* does not give us the personal name of the king. The Cullakāliṅga Jātaka mentions Aruṇa, the king of Assaka, who accepted the challenge of the contemporary powerful king of Kaliṅga and ultimately defeated him. The battle ended in a treaty which was solemnised by a matrimonial alliance between the two royal houses.<sup>3</sup> The Godāvarī flowed between the two neighbouring kingdoms of Assaka and Mūlaka or Alaka,<sup>4</sup> the latter lying to the north of the former and at the foot of the Vindhya-s. In the commentary on the *Sutta-nipāta*, the two kingdoms are represented as two Andhaka or Andhra principalities. According to the *Vimānavatthu*-Commentary, the ruler of Assaka at the time of the Buddha was a king whose son was Prince Sujāta.<sup>5</sup>

Among the dwellers of the Vindhya region other than the Bhojas and 'Avantis including

<sup>1</sup> *Dīgha*, II, p. 235.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, ii, p. 155.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, iii, pp. 3-5.

<sup>4</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, verse 977.

<sup>5</sup> *Vimānavatthu-ābhakathā*, p. 259f.

the Anuvindakas, the *Apadāna* (ii, p. 359) mentions the Bhagga-Kārūsas, Okkalas and Mekalas. The Dasannas find mention in the Jātakas<sup>1</sup> and Petavatthu. They were evidently a people who settled along the banks of the river named Dasanñā (modern Dasan, a tributary of the Yamunā), and founded a territory with their capital at Vedisa (modern Bhilsa) on the river Vetravatī. Erakaccha was a well-known city of the Dasannas.<sup>2</sup> The Dasanna country is counted among the sixteen mahājanapadas in the *Mahābhārata* (ii, 5.10) and *Mahāvastu* (i, p. 34). The name of the Mekalas is to be met with only in a nominal list. The Okkalas were evidently the inhabitants of Ukkala (Sk. Utkala) which lay, according to the *Mahāvastu* (iii, p. 303), in Uttarāpatha. It is not impossible that the Okkalas who belonged at first to the north-western region of India, founded a colony afterwards in the Vindhya region. That there was an Ukkala janapada in Uttarāpatha is borne out by the *Theragāthā*-Commentary, according to which, the two caravan-merchants, Tapassu and Bhalluka, referred in the *Mahāvastu* to Utkala in Uttarāpatha, were citizens of Pokkharavatī,<sup>3</sup> a well-known city in Gandhāra.

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, iii, p. 338.

<sup>2</sup> *Petavatthu*, ii, 7.

<sup>3</sup> *Theragāthā-āphakathā*, i, p. 48f.

Thus it is very probable that Utkala in Uttarāpatha, with Pokkharavati as its chief town, formed a part of the kingdom of Gandhāra. So far as the *Apadāna* reference is concerned, the association of the Okkalas with the Mekalas hardly leaves room for doubt that they belonged to Ukkala, which, together with Od̄a, constituted Orissa proper. The *Apadāna* list contains also the name of the Oddakas whose dialect, as already noted, was counted among the instances of Milakkhabhāsā. Certain classes of thinkers, namely, the *ahetuvādā*, *akiriyavādā* and *nāthikavādā*, are banned as Ukkalāvassabhaññā, i.e., persons speaking the 'unintelligible jargon of the country of the Okkalas'.<sup>1</sup> The Bhaggas, associated in the *Apadāna* with the Kārūṣas whom the *Mārkanḍeya Purāṇa* allocates to the Vindhya region, were a people who founded a territory contiguous to that of the Vamsas or Vacchas. Their capital was Sumsumāragira. In the Buddha's time their country became a dependency of the kingdom of Vaccha and was being governed by Prince Bodhi, son of king Udena, who built a magnificent palace called Kokanada at Sumsumāragira.<sup>2</sup> A branch of the Bhaggas,

<sup>1</sup> *Ānguttara*, ii, p. 31; *Majjhima*, iii, p. 78. Buddhaghosa wrongly explains the expression as signifying two persons, Vassa and Bhāññā, who were natives of Ukkala.

<sup>2</sup> *Ānguttara*, ii, p. 61; *Majjhima*, i, p. 332.

as already pointed out, also occupied a small territory between Vesālī and Sāvatthī.

Among the peoples of the Aparānta or western sea-board other than the Sindhu-Soviras, we have mention in the *Apadāna* (ii, p. 359) of the Suratthas, Aparāntakas and Suppārikas (or Suppārakas). The Jaina canonical texts mention the name of Kacchas, who settled down in a territory, now known as Cutch. The Bharukacchas (Sk. Bhṛgukacchas) were the citizens of Bharukaccha (modern Broach in Kathiawar).<sup>1</sup> The kingdom of Bharu stood on the sea and was three hundred leagues in extent. The tradition is that the whole of this kingdom was submerged in the sea by the fury of the gods.<sup>1</sup> According to the *Divyāvadāna* (p. 576) the kingdom of Bhiru with its principal city Bhiruka or Bhirukaccha was founded by and named after Bhiru, who was one of the two chief ministers of king Rudrāyaṇa of Sauvira in the lower Indus Valley. Rudrāyaṇa, a contemporary of king Bimbisāra of Magadha, was killed by his wicked son Śikhandī, whose kingdom was afterwards destroyed as a punishment for this crime. The legend concerning the foundation of the Bhiru kingdom with its capital in the Buddha's time cannot be believed, for the simple reason that the kingdom and its sea-port

---

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, ii, p. 169f.

had existed long before. The Sussondi Jātaka speaks of the ministrel Sagga's journey from Benares to Bharukaccha<sup>1</sup> (Barygaza of Ptolemy and the Periplus.)

The Suppārikas or Suppārakas (Sk. Saur-pārakas) were the citizens of Suppāra or Sup-pāraka (modern Sopārā) which was the capital of the kingdom of Sunāparanta.<sup>2</sup> The distance of Suppāra from Sāvatthī was one hundred and twenty leagues.<sup>3</sup> The people of Sunāparanta 'were reported as being fierce and violent'.<sup>4</sup>

The Suratṭhas were the inhabitants of the kingdom of Suratṭha (Sk. Surāṣṭra) which is identified with Kathiawar. The prosperity of Suratṭha was due to trade.<sup>5</sup> One king Pingala ruled in Suratṭha as a subordinate potentate under the Mauryas,<sup>6</sup> while, according to the Junāgad inscription of Rudradāman I, the Yavana Tuśāspa was the governor of Surāṣṭra under king Aśoka.

Among the peoples of South India referred to in the Great Epic and *Mārkandeya Purāṇa*,

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, iii, p. 187f.

<sup>2</sup> *Majjhima*, iii, p. 268; *Samyutta*, iv, p. 61f; N. L. Dey, *Geographical Dictionary of Ancient and Medieval India*, p. 197.

<sup>3</sup> *Dhammapada-āphakathā*, ii, p. 213.

<sup>4</sup> *Majjhima*, iii, p. 268; *Samyutta*, iv, p. 61.

<sup>5</sup> *Apadāna*, ii, p. 359; *Milinda*, pp. 331, 359; *Jātaka*, iii, p. 463 v, p. 133.\*

<sup>6</sup> *Petavatthu*, iv, 3. According to the Commentary, the contemporary Maurya king was Dhammāśoka, which is, however doubtful. See C. D. Chatterjee's paper, 'A historical character in the reign of Aśoka Maurya', *D. R. Bhandarkar Volume*, p. 329f.

the Andhakā (Sk. Andhrā), Sabarā, Damīlā (Drāvidā) and Kolakā (Colā) find mention in the *Apadāna* (ii, pp. 358-59). The Mahimsakā and Kalingā are mentioned in the Jātakas. Uttaramadhurā mentioned in the Jātakas presupposes knowledge of Dakkhinamadhurā, which must have been the capital of the Pāṇḍyas of South India. The Pāṇḍyas as an independent people find mention in the edicts of Aśoka along with the Colas, Satiyaputras and Keralaputras. These four peoples must have been comprehended by the name, Damīlā, in the *Apadāna*. The Āndhrakas, Pulindas and Śavaras are counted in the *Mahābhārata* (xii, 207.42) among the people of the Deccan. In the edicts of Aśoka too, the Āndhras are associated with the Pārindas who were apparently no other people than the Pulindas in the Great Epic and the Purāṇas.

Vincent A. Smith considers the Andhakas (Āndhrakas) as 'a Dravidian people, now represented by the large population speaking the Telugu language, who occupied the deltas of the Godāvarī and the Kṛṣṇā'. But in the Pali commentaries, exactly as in the *Apadāna*, the Andhakas as a people are distinguished from the Damīlas, although their dialects are classed under the group of eighteen Milakkhabhāsā or non-Aryan languages. Srinivas Iyengar thinks that they were originally a Vindhyan

tribe, whose territories extended from west to east down the valleys of the Godāvari and the Kṛṣṇā.<sup>1</sup> According to the *Sutta-nipāta* commentary, Assaka and Mūlaka became two Andhaka principalities. In the *Kathāvatthu* commentary, Buddhaghosa definitely mentions that Pubbasela, Aparasela, Rājagiri and Siddhattha were all localities in the Andhaka territory. The Serivāṇija Jātaka locates Andhapura, the capital of the Andhakas, on the river Telavāha, identified by Dr. D. R. Bhandarkar with the modern Tel or Telingiri.<sup>2</sup> The Āndhras and Pārindas were two among the semi-independent ruling tribes within Aśoka's empire.

The Sabaras (Sk. Śavaras) were evidently an aboriginal tribe identified usually with the Suari of Pliny and the Sabarae of Ptolemy. They are probably represented now by the Savaralu or Sauras of the Vizagapatam Hills and the Savaris of Gwalior.<sup>3</sup>

The Akitti Jātaka speaks of the Damilaratṭha as a territory round Kāvīrapattana,<sup>4</sup> the port of Kāverī which is definitely placed by Buddhadatta in the kingdom of Coḷa (Coḷaratṭhe).<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Indian Antiquary*, 1913, p. 276f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, 1918, p. 71.

<sup>3</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, 4th ed., p. 79.

<sup>4</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 238.

<sup>5</sup> *Buddhadatta's Manuals*, Introduction, xiii, foll.  
Rn

King Aśoka frankly admits that the Colas maintained their independence during his reign. Their territory in Dakkhināpatha<sup>1</sup> certainly lay to the south of Aśoka's empire including the Andhra and Mahīṣaka or Kekaya territories.

The Pāṇḍyas were a ruling people of South India, whose territory lay to the south of the river Kāverī. Their later capital, Madhurā, is described by Buddhaghosa as a suttapāṭṭana or a port noted for the export of cotton fabrics. During Aśoka's reign they were one of the independent nations in the south. As described in the Hāthigumpha inscription of Khāravela, the contemporary Pāṇḍya king was rich in the possession of gems, pearls and jewels.

The Keralaputras, Keralas or Cheras were a branch of the Damīlas who occupied a territory along the western sea-coast of the Deccan. In Aśoka's time they, too, were the independent nations of South India.

The Kāliṅgas were a powerful people of India who founded a territory between the territories of the Lādhas and the Andhakas, and along the eastern sea-coast. Their country represented one of the seven sub-kingdoms in the empire of Renu, ruled by king Sattabhū with his capital at Dantapura (Pālura), near Chīcācole. The Hāthigumpha inscription speaks of the

<sup>1</sup> *Petavatthu* commentary, p. 133.

three dynasties of kings who reigned in Kaliṅga, the third being a Ceti or Cedi royal family to which Khāravela himself belonged. One of the ancient kings of the Kāliṅgas was a contemporary and rival of Aruṇa, the king of Assaka, who being defeated in battle, concluded a treaty by which he gave all his four daughters in marriage to the victor.<sup>1</sup> Another king was a vassal under king Daṇḍakī.<sup>2</sup> A third king, Karanḍu or Karakandu, was a contemporary of Naggaji of Gandhāra.<sup>3</sup> In the Kāliṅgabodhi Jātaka we read that the Kāliṅga king of Dantapura had two sons, Mahākāliṅga and Cullakāliṅga, the elder brother succeeding his father and the younger brother marrying a Madda princess from Sāgala while in exile. Cullakāliṅga's son, who was destined to be a Cakkavatti, was installed on the throne of Kalinga after the death of Mahākāliṅga.<sup>4</sup> The Jātakas maintain also a tradition of a Kaliṅga king, named Nālikira, who brought about destruction of his kingdom by ill-treating a hermit.<sup>5</sup>

The Kaliṅga country was conquered by Aśoka and it was annexed to his kingdom. The people of Kaliṅga were so powerful at that

<sup>1</sup> *Jātakā*, iii, p. 3f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, v, p. 135f.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, p. 376f.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, ix, p. 232f.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, v, p. 144.

time that they could well afford to lose in battle about three hundred thousand soldiers.

In the Great Epic and *Mārkandeya Purāṇa*, the Āṅgeyas (Pali Āṅgā), Māgadhas, Vāṅgeyas (Vāṅgā), Sauhmas, Tāmraliptakas, Bhārgavas, Vaidehas and Mallas are counted among the peoples of Eastern India. The early Buddhist and Jaina texts speak also of the Vajjis, Licchavis, Nātas, Sumbhas and Lādhas (Rādhas).

Of them, the Lādhas lived in a pathless country with its two divisions, known as Subbhābhūmi and Vajjabhūmi. It may be rightly supposed that these two divisions of Lādha corresponded to Suhma and Tāmralipti respectively. The Jaina *Ācārāṅga Sūtra* speaks of the inhabitants of the Rādha country as rude and generally hostile to the ascetics.<sup>1</sup> When the ascetics appeared near their villages, they used to set dogs upon them, uttering the syllables, 'cu cu'.

The Āṅgas, Vāṅgas and Magadhas as countries and peoples figure prominently in the Jaina list of sixteen mahājanapadas, while in the Pali list the Vāṅgas have no place at all. So far as the evidence of the Pali canon and *Milindapañha* goes, Vāṅga stood apart from Āṅga. Vāṅga finds mention indeed, in the

<sup>1</sup> *Ācārāṅga Sūtra*, I. 8.3.

·*Mahāniddesa*<sup>2</sup> and *Milindapañha*<sup>3</sup> as a centre of trade reached by sea. According to the Pali chronicles, however, both the country and capital of the Vaṅgas were known as Vaṅga. The then king of the Vaṅgas had married a princess from the royal family of Kaliṅga.<sup>4</sup>

It is in the *Atharvaveda* (v, 22.14) that we have the earliest mention of the Aṅgas and Magadhas as two peoples. From the *Vrātya* book of the same *Veda* (xv), it is evident that they were despised as *Vrātyas*<sup>4</sup> or peoples who lived outside the pale of orthodox Brahmanism. Aṅga with its capital at Campā formed one of the seven sub-kingdoms within the empire of Renu, and it was allotted to a king named Dhatarattha of the line of Bharata. Magadha, however, has no place in this list. According to the *Harivamśa* and *Purāṇas*, *Dadhivāhana* was the son and successor of Aṅga. This Dadhivāhana could not have been the same king Dadhivāhana of Aṅga who is represented by the Jainas as a contemporary of Mahāvira and a weak rival of king Śatānika of Kauśambi.<sup>5</sup> According to the Pali tradition, however, the king of Aṅga in the Buddha's time was Brahma-

✓ *Niddesa*, vol. i, p. 154.

✓ *Milinda*, p. 359.

✓ *Dīpavamśa*, ix, 2.

✗<sup>4</sup> For a learned note on the subject, *vide* A. B. Keith's paper in *RAS*, 1918, p. 155f.

✗<sup>5</sup> *JASB*, 1919, p. 320f.

datta who was defeated and killed by Prince Seniya Bimbisāra, son of king Bhāttiya of Magadha, who ruled Campā as his father's viceroy. Āṅga continued to be a dependency of Magadha till the reign of Khāravela of Kalinga. The Dīpavamsa (p. 28) tells us that Campā was ruled by Aśoka's son, Mahinda, his sons and grandsons. In the earlier phase of the war, Brahmadatta is said to have defeated Bimbisāra's father, Bhāttiya. Even before that the kings of Āṅga were at war with those of Magadha, the victory being sometimes on this side and sometimes on the other. The Vidhurapandita Jātaka refers to Rājagaha as a city of Āṅga.<sup>1</sup>

Among the peoples of Eastern India, the Magadhas or Māgadhas were destined to rise steadily into an imperial power. As a Khattiya tribe, they founded a territory round Mt. Vepulla, which was bounded on the north and west by the Ganges, on the east by Campā, and on the south by the Vindhya, the Sone forming the western boundary of the Magadhakhetta. The Gayākhetta formed an integral part of the Magadha kingdom throughout its existence. The Mahābhārata (i, 63.30) honours king Bṛhadratha as the founder of Girivraja, also named Bāhradrathapura after him, while the Rāmāyaṇa

---

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, vi, p. 271.

(i, 32.7) gives the credit for it rather to his father, the Cedi king Vasu Uparicara. In the Cetiya Jātaka, the five sons of the Ceti king Upacara or Apacara are mentioned as founders of the cities of Hatthipura (in the Kuru realm), Assapura (in the kingdom of Aṅga), Sihapura (in the Panjab), Uttarapañcāla (in Pañcāla), and Daddarapura, the Giribaja being excluded from the list.<sup>1</sup> But the Purāṇas persistently describe the Bārhadrathas as the royal dynasty that continued to rule the Magadha kingdom almost up to the 6th century B.C.

Seniya Bimbisāra was king of Aṅga-Magadha when the Buddha renounced the world and Mahāvīra became a Jina. He was junior to the Buddha in age by five years. According to the Buddhist tradition, Bimbisāra's father and immediate predecessor was king Bhatiya or Bhaṭṭiya, whose connection with the Bārhadrathas is nowhere mentioned or indicated. King Caṇḍapajjota of Avanti, Udena of Vamsa, Pasenadi of Kośala, Rudrāyana of Sauvīra and Pukkusāti of Gandhāra are known to have been his great contemporaries. Similarly Pulika of Avanti, Parantapa of Vamsa, Mahāpasenadi of Kosala and Brahmadatta of Aṅga may be described as contemporaries of Bimbisāra's father as also of himself. In the Great Epic,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, iii, pp. 454, 480-481.

Jarāsandha, the most powerful king of Magadha, is introduced as the son and successor of Br̥hadratha. His powerful ally was the Cedi king Śisupāla, both of whom were defeated and killed by the Pāñdava brothers. Nothing of this historical legend can be traced in the early Jain or Buddhist texts. On the other hand, in the Jaina Uttarādhyayana Sūtra (xviii, 43), we have mention of Jaya, son and successor of king Samuddavijaya of Rājagaha, as the eleventh Cakkavatti of the Bhāratavarṣa. Arindama, Duyyodhana, and a few other ancient kings of Magadha are mentioned by name in the Jātakas. During the period preceding the advent of Mahāvira and the Buddha, the notable event in the history of Magadha was the prolonged contest for supremacy between the Magadhan monarchs and the kings of Aṅga with varying results. It ultimately ended, however, in permanent annexation of Aṅga to Magadha.

The Videhas, who represented in the Buddha's time as one of the important clans constituting the Vajjian or Licchavi confederacy, were a people who originally migrated from the eastern continent of Videha and founded a territory named Videha after them on the left bank of the Ganges. According to the *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa* (I. IV, 1 etc.), the country of Videha owes its name to its first king, Videgha Māthava, who came from the Sarasvatī region. This

king Māthava would seem to be no other than Makhādeva or Maghādeva in Pali. The father and predecessor of Nemi or Nimi as noted before, was a contemporary of Naggaji of Gandhāra, Dummukha of Pañcāla and others. It was from Nimi that the long line of the Janakas proceeded. The son and immediate successor of Nimi was Kalārajanaka,<sup>1</sup> so called because of his projecting teeth, whose son and successor was Samaikara. Thus Makhādeva is rightly described as the forerunner of the powerful kings of Mithilā. According to the *Rāmāyaṇa* (1.71.3), the *ādipuruṣa* of the royal family of Mithilā was Nimi (Jaina Nami), whose son was Mithi and grandson, Janaka I. Jánaka's son, Janaka II, father of Sītā, had a brother named Kuśadhvaja who became the king of Sāmkasya. In the *Vāyu* (88.7-8) and *Viṣṇu* (iv, 5.1) Purāṇas, however, Nimi or Nemi figures as a son of Ikshvāku and is honoured with the epithet of Videha. The *Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad* speaks of the philosopher king Janaka of Mithilā whom Rhys Davids was inclined to identify with king Mahājanaka of the Mahājanaka Jātaka.<sup>2</sup> The Videha country was bounded on the east by the Kauśiki, on the south by the Ganges, on the west by the

<sup>1</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, 82; *Jātaka*, vi, 129.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, vi.

river Sadānirā and on the north by the Hima-layas. It was, according to the Gandhāra Jātaka,<sup>1</sup> 300 leagues in extent and contained at one time 16,000 villages, 16,000 storehouses and 16,000 dancing girls. Its capital Mithilā was built by Govinda.<sup>2</sup> The great prosperity of the Videhas was due to trade with other countries, Benares and the rest. According to the Jaina canonical tradition, Cetaka<sup>3</sup> of Videha was an influential leader of the Licchavi confederacy. His sister, Triśalā, was the mother of Mahāvīra, the historical founder of Jainism, and his daughter, Cellanā or Vedehi, was married to Śrenika Bimbisāra of Magadha and became mother of Kūṇika, i.e., Ajātasattu.

When we speak of the Vajjis (Sk. Vṛjis), we speak either of the Vajjian confederacy or the Vajjis as one of the constituent clans of that confederacy. The confederacy is also associated with the name of the Licchavis forming another constituent clan. The confederate clans were eight in number (atthakulā or atthakulakā) which, according to the Jaina *Kalpa*<sup>4</sup> and *Nirayāvalī Sūtras*, consisted of nine Licchavi clans. They formed an alliance with the nine Mallakas and the kings of Kāsi and Kosala.

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, iii, p. 365.

<sup>2</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 235.

<sup>3</sup> *Ācārāṅga Sūtra*, pp. xii-xvi—maternal uncle of Mahāvīra.

<sup>4</sup> See, 128.

This alliance existed not only at the time of Mahāvīra's demise but also when a war ensued between Kūṇika Ajātasattu and the Licchavis.

As for the remaining confederate clans, one may mention the name of Nāyas, Nātas or Jñātrikas,<sup>1</sup> who lived in a suburb of Vesālī, the Vajjian capital, and the Bhaggas who settled between Vesālī and Sāvatthi. Thus it may be supposed that the eight or nine confederate clans with the exception of the Videhas resided near about Vesālī which was at the time one of the most flourishing and beautiful cities in northern India.<sup>2</sup> According to the Ekapaṇṇa Jātaka, the city of Vesālī was surrounded by a triple wall, each wall standing at the distance of a league from the next and was provided with three gates and watch-towers.<sup>3</sup> The Vṛjis or Licchavis possessed a bright complexion; they were luxurious and at the same time most warlike, and strong in their national unity.<sup>4</sup> Theirs was an oligarchical republic and they had a common Mote-hall in which all important questions of administration were decided.<sup>5</sup> So long as they were able to maintain their unity, no power could conquer their country.

<sup>1</sup> See B. C. Law, *Some Kṣatriya Tribes of Ancient India*, Ch. II.

<sup>2</sup> *Vinaya Texts*, S.B.E., II, 171; *Lalitavistara*, Ch. III, p. 21.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, I, p. 504.

<sup>4</sup> B. C. Law, *Some Kṣatriya Tribes of Ancient India*, Licchavis.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, Chapter on Licchavis, Sec. V.

But we shall see anon that their unity was destroyed and that their country was conquered by the kings of Magadha not long after the demise of the Buddha. According to their national custom, a most handsome girl was reserved for the pleasure of the people.<sup>1</sup> Each family had its distinctive dress of its own.<sup>2</sup> The Vajjis or the Licchavis claimed their descent from the royal family of Kāsi.

The Mallas and the Licchavis are counted in the *Manusamhitā*<sup>3</sup> among the Vrātya Kṣatriyas. Like the Licchavis, the Mallas or Mallakis, consisting of nine clans according to the Jain canonical texts, formed a strong confederacy, republican in its character.<sup>4</sup> They too had a Mote-hall, for the discussion of all important matters concerning them. In the Mahāparinibbāna Suttanta,<sup>5</sup> they are called Vāsetṭhas, i.e., the Khattiyas belonging to the Vāsetṭha (Vaśīṣṭha) gotra. Like the Videhas, the Mallas had originally a monarchical form of government, Okkāka (Ikshvāku) being mentioned in the Kusa Jātaka (No. 531) as a Malla king. It is probable that like the Śākyas, the Mallas as Kṣatriyas claimed their descent from

<sup>1</sup> B. C. Law, *Historical Gleanings*, p. 71.

<sup>2</sup> Watters, *On Yuan Ohwang*, ii, p. 79.

<sup>3</sup> X. 22.

<sup>4</sup> B. C. Law, *Some Kṣatriya Tribes of Ancient India*, Ch. IV.

<sup>5</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, pp. 158-159.

the royal family of Okkāka. The Mallas and the Licchavis as two neighbouring peoples established friendly relations between them at least for their self-defence, though the Bhaddasāla Jātaka (No. 465) offers us an account of a conflict between them. At the time of the rise of Buddhism the Mallas were divided into two main sections, one having their capital at Pāvā and the other at Kusinārā. There was current among the Mallas a living tradition of the former glory of Kusinārā, which was built on the site of the ancient city of Kuśāvati, which was the capital of the king Mahāsudassana.<sup>1</sup> There was a great belt of a Himalayan forest called Mahāvana which covered some portions of the Vajji and Malla territories. The Mallas retained their independence till the demise of the Buddha, as we find that both the main sections of the Mallas<sup>2</sup> appeared among claimants for shares of the bodily remains of the Master. It is not yet possible to collect the names of all the nine branches of the Mallas mentioned in the Jaina *Kalpasūtra*.

The Śākyas who, too, formed a confederacy with the Koliyas, have a permanent place in the history of India and of the world on account of the birth of the Buddha Gotama among them. They founded a kingdom named after them in

---

<sup>1</sup> *Dīghanikā*, II, p. 170f.

<sup>2</sup> *Jbd.*, II, p. 167.

that part of northern India which stood between the kingdom of Kosala in the west and the Malla territory in the south-east. Their capital, Kapilavatthu, was founded around or near the hermitage of the sage Kapila. The Śākyas claimed their descent from king Okkāka whose ancestry is traced back to king Mahā-sammata. In the early Pali texts, they are described as Ādiccabandhu in the sense that they belonged to the solar race of the Khattiyas. They had their Mote-hall at Kapilavatthu where their administrative and judicial business was carried out.<sup>1</sup> They as a ruling people were proud of the purity of their birth, for which, as tradition goes, they had to pay a heavy penalty. In the Buddha's time, the position of the Śākyas was that of vassals (*anujātā*) under king Pasenadi of Kosala. Placed as they were, they could not cherish much of territorial ambition. They once came into conflict with the Koliyas over the waters of the Rohinī river which had separated their territories.<sup>2</sup> According to the Jātakas and the Pali commentaries, the Śākyas territory was invaded and conquered by Viḍū-dabha, the usurper king of Kosala in the last year of the Buddha's career. But in the Mahā-parinibbāna Suttanta,<sup>3</sup> we read that both the

<sup>1</sup> *Buddhist India*, p. 19. Cf. *ZDMG.*, 44, 344 (Jolly).

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, v, 412.

<sup>3</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, 167.

Sākyas and the Koliyas as independent political powers appeared among the rival claimants for shares of the Buddha's bodily remains. Among other claimants, we have mention of the Bulis of Allakappa, the Moriyas of Pippalivana and the Kālāmas of Kesaputta. We know practically nothing about the Bulis and the Kālāmas save and except that they were two of the small ruling clans. As for the Moriyas of Pippalivana, according to the *Mahāvamsa* commentary,<sup>1</sup> two are the possible derivations of their name, one from the word *modiya* meaning delightful and the other from the word *mora* meaning peacock. According to the first derivation, the Moriyas were so called because they lived in a delightful land, and according to the second, they were called Moriyas because they founded their city in a locality which always resounded with the cries of peacocks. The *Mahāvamsa* commentary (pp. 119–121) traces the origin of the Maurya dynasty of Magadha to the Moriyas of Pippalivana. Candagutta, according to this tradition, was born of the queen-consort of the Morian king of Pippalivana. This is evidently in conflict with the account in the *Mudrārāksasa*.

Turning at last to the peoples placed in the Brahmanical Mid-land, we have to take into

---

<sup>1</sup> *Mahāvamsa-Tikā* (Sinhalese ed.), p. 119f.; Law, *Some Kṣatriya-Tribes of Ancient India*, pp. 211–212.

account the four important peoples, e.g., the Kāsīs, the Kosalas, the Vamsas and the Cedis. The Kāsīs were one of the most ancient peoples of Northern India, who find mention in the Atharva-veda,<sup>1</sup> in which they are associated with the Kosalas and Videhas. They founded a kingdom named Kāsī after them, which was 300 leagues in extent, with its capital at Bārānāsi which was known by other names in the past ages.<sup>2</sup> The city of Benares which stood on the left bank of the Ganges was encompassed by the walls that were twelve leagues in circuit. In the Mahāgovinda Suttanta Kāsī with Bārānāsi as its capital is included in the list of seven sub-kingdoms within the empire of Renu. The administration of the kingdom of Kāsī fell to the share of Dhatarattha represented as a king of the line of Bharata. The Bharata line of the Kāsī kings appears to have been supplanted by a new line of Brahmadattas who were probably of the Videhan origin.<sup>3</sup> Most of the Jātaka stories have been narrated with reference to the reigns of the Brahmadattas of Kāsī. The *Mahābhārata* speaks of a dynasty consisting of as many as 100 Brahmadattas (ii, 8.23). That Brahmadatta was more a family designation than a personal name of the

<sup>1</sup> *Vedic Index*, ii, 116 f.n.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, 15, 119-20.

<sup>3</sup> Raychaudhuri, *op. cit.*, p. 63.

reigning king is evident from at least two Jātakas namely the Dummedha<sup>1</sup> and Ganga-māla.<sup>2</sup> The Videhan origin is borne out by the evidence of such Jātakas as the Mātiposaka and Sambula, especially the latter in which a son of Brahmadatta, king of Kāsi, is expressly called Vedehaputta. The history of the Kāsīs, their kings and country is long as well as eventful. Many Jātakas testify to the unsurpassed glory of the city of Benares and to the ambition of its rulers for paramount sovereignty over the whole of Jambudipa.<sup>3</sup> The *Vinaya Mahā-vagga* (x, 2.3), too, bears testimony to the former greatness and prosperity of the city. The kingdom of Kāsi became important in the history of the Jains on account of the fact that their Tirthankara Pārśva was a prince of Benares. There was a time when king Manoja of Benares was able to subdue the kings of Kosala, Aṅga and Magadha.<sup>4</sup> At another time, the kingdom of Assaka became a dependency of Kāsi.<sup>5</sup> During the period preceding the rise of Jainism and Buddhism, the most important event in the history of the Kāsīs is the repeated struggle for supremacy between the kings of Kāsi and

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, i, p. 259f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, No. 421.

<sup>3</sup> Bhaddasīla Jātaka No. 465, Dhonasākha Jātaka No. 353.

<sup>4</sup> Sonananda Jātaka No. 532.

<sup>5</sup> Assaka Jātaka No. 207.

Kosala. Some of the Kāśī kings in the Jātakas,<sup>1</sup> as pointed out by D. R. Bhandarkar<sup>2</sup>, find mention also in the Purāṇas.<sup>3</sup>

The series of struggles ended finally in a permanent annexation of the kingdom of Kāśī to that of Kosala.<sup>4</sup>

The Kosalas<sup>5</sup> as a people do not find mention in the Vedic texts. They were a Kṣatriya tribe who like the Śākyas traced their descent from king Okkāka. The kinship between the two neighbouring peoples was so close in all respects that the Buddha openly confessed that he was as much a Kosalan (Kosalako) as the then king Pasenadi of Kosala.<sup>6</sup> In the earlier days of Brahmadatta, king of Kāśī, the Kosala country was only 'a poor and tiny estate with slender resources'. (daliddo appadhano appabhogo appabalo appavāhano appavijito aparipunṇa-kosakoṭṭhāgāro).<sup>7</sup> It may be taken for granted that Ayojjhā (Ayodhyā) was the earlier capital of the undivided kingdom of Kosala. One king Kālasena reigned in

<sup>1</sup> Carmichael Lectures, 1918, p. 57.

<sup>2</sup> Vissasena of Jātaka No. 263 = Viśwasakseṇa; Udaya of Jātaka No. 458 = Udakasena, Bhallāṭiya of Jātaka No. 504 = Bhallāṭa.

<sup>3</sup> Vinaya, S.B.H., vol. ...., 294-99; Kuṇāla Jātaka No. 536; Kosambi Jātaka No. 428.

<sup>4</sup> For fuller details, *vide* B. C. Law, *Ancient Indian tribes*, Ch. II.

<sup>5</sup> Dhammacetiya Sutta, Majjhī....., .., p. 118f.

<sup>6</sup> Vinaya, Mahāvagga, S.B.H., vol. xvii, 294.

Āyejjhā as a contemporary of Sāgara of Uttaramadhurā and Vāsudeva Kāñha of Dvāravatī. The capital of the Kosalas in the Buddha's time was Sāvatthī on the right bank of the Aciravatī. King Daśaratha whom the *Rāmāyaṇa* represents as the king of Kosala with his capital at Ayodhyā is described in the Dasaratha Jātaka as the king of Kāśī. The second capital of the Kosalas was Sāketa as may be inferred from the Nandiyamiga Jātaka.<sup>1</sup> But Vaṅka and many others are said to have reigned in Kosala when Sāvatthī became its capital. This was indeed the third and last capital of the Kosalas. At the time of the rise of Buddhism, Pasenadi, son and successor of Mahāpasenadi, was king of Kosala. Kāśī became subordinate to Kosala already during the reign of Pasenadi's father. Kāśī was at that time being governed by Pasenadi's brother who was evidently his viceroy. The throne of Kosala was being usurped by prince Virūḍhaka, a son of Pasenadi. Pasenadi is known to have been not only a contemporary of the Buddha but also a person who was born on the same date and died in the same year (tvam pi asitiko aham pi asitiko).<sup>2</sup>

The Vamsas or Vacchas<sup>3</sup> were a people who founded their territory along the right bank

<sup>1</sup> No. 385.

<sup>2</sup> *Dharmacetiya Sutta, Majjhima*, ii.

<sup>3</sup> For fuller details, see B. O. Law, *Ancient Mid-Indian Kṣatriya Tribes*, Vol. I, Ch. VI.

of the Yamunā with their capital at Kosambi. The Purāṇas trace their origin to the royal family of Kāśī. In the epic tradition, a Ceti prince named Kuśāmba is described as the founder of the city of Kosambi. The king of the Vamsas in the Buddha's time was Udena (Udayana) who is described as the son and successor of king Parantapa.<sup>1</sup> In the Purāṇas, Udayana is connected with a long line of Kuru kings headed by Niokṣu who, on the destruction of Hastināpura by flood, transferred his residence to Kauśāmbi. Udena excelled others in the wealth of his elephants and sought to strengthen his position by entering into matrimonial alliances with the neighbouring kings. Even during the reign of Udena, the Bhaggā country remained a dependency of the Vamsas.

The Cetis or Cedis<sup>2</sup>, also known as Cetaputtā, were one of the most ancient peoples of India whose territory lay midway between the kingdoms of the Kurus and the Vamsas. In the Cetiya Jātaka we are given a genealogy of the Ceti kings from the first king Mahāsammata. The tenth king Upacara or Apacara is generally identified with the Puru king Vasu-uparicara mentioned in the *Mahābhārata*. The agreement

<sup>1</sup> According to the Purāṇas, his father's name was Vasudāna and according to Bhāṣa, Sahasrānka.

<sup>2</sup> For fuller details, *vide* B. C. Law, *Ancient Mid-Indian Kṣatriya Tribes*, Vol. I, Ch. V.

between the two legends lies in the fact that in both the five sons of Uparicara are said to have been founders of the five different lines of kings. Even in historical times, as already pointed out, the third dynasty of the kings of Kalinga including Khāravela is expressly mentioned to have originated from the Cedis.

The early texts of Jainism and Buddhism present, on the whole, a picture, envisaged by Rhys Davids<sup>1</sup> for the first time, of the political history of India in which the four great monarchies of Magadha, Kosala, Vamsa and Avanti, appeared as powerful competitors for overlordship. The remaining powers were of minor importance. They only remained as passive spectators or subordinate allies. The two of the most important oligarchical powers were the confederacies of the Vajjis or Licchavis of Vesālī and of the Mallas of Kusinārā and Pāvā. The Śākyas and Koliyas were only vassals under the monarch of Kosala. The Bulis of Allakappa, the Moriyas of Pippalivana, the Kālāmas of Kesaputta and the Bhaggas of Sumsumāragira remained as vassals under Kosala and Vamsa respectively. The four king-

<sup>1</sup> *Buddhist India*, Chaps. 1 and 2: This subject has been further discussed and elaborated by D. R. Bhandarkar in his *Carmichael Lectures*, 1918, by Raychaudhuri in his *Political History of Ancient India*, by Vincent A. Smith in his *Early History of India*, and by various writers in the *Cambridge History*, Vol. I.

doms of Kāśī, Ālavī, Kuru and Pañcāla acknowledged the supremacy of Kosala which became very powerful by the conquest of the kingdom of Kāśī. The kingdom of Avantī under Caṇḍapajjota became so powerful that all the neighbouring states admitted its supremacy in Western India. The kingdom of Magadha under Bimbisāra extended its supremacy over the whole of Kājangala along with the kingdom of Aṅga. In the Mahāparinibbāna Suttanta, king Ajātasattu of Magadha is represented as saying to himself 'I will uproot the Vajjis'. An explanation of this grim determination is given by Buddhaghosa. We are told that Ajātasattu and the Licchavis shared between them a big port on the Ganges. At a certain distance from it, there was a mineral mine the produce of which was to be equally divided, as per agreement between the parties. But the terms of the agreement were violated by the Licchavis. Ajātasattu, fully conscious of the strength of the Licchavis as gaṇarājās, did not venture to enforce the terms of the agreement upon them. According to the Jaina *Nirayāvalī Sūtra*, Ajātasattu presented his two uterine brothers, Halla and Vehalla, with a noble elephant and a costly necklace. After ascending the throne, he demanded back both the presents. Reluctant to return them, his

brothers fled away from Magadha and sought the protection of their maternal grandfather, Cetaka, the Licchavi-nāyaka of Vesālī. Ajatasattu having failed to get the things back by peaceful means, declared war against the Licchavis under Cetaka. A fierce battle ensued ending in the victory of the latter. The fact, however, seems to be that when Ajatasattu aspired after the throne of his father, the Licchavis set up a rival claimant. Anyhow the utterance of King Ajatasattu is significant as indicating that previously he was baffled in his attempts to subdue and punish the Licchavis. He sent his minister, Vassakāra, to the Buddha who laid much stress upon unity as the real source of their strength. Ajatasattu employed his ministers, Sunidha and Vassakāra, to fortify the village of Pātaligāma on the Ganges to repel the attacks of the Vajjis and to bring about their disunion in order to weaken them.

Shortly after the death of Bimbisāra, Pasenadi stopped the payment of the revenue of the village of Kāsi which was offered by his father to his sister, as he was not in favour of allowing Ajatasattu, a parricide, to enjoy the income. This resulted in a war between Magadha and Kosala with the result that Ajatasattu was ultimately defeated and taken prisoner. A treaty was then concluded by the marriage of Pasenadi's daughter, Vajirā

with Ajātasatīu. Pasenadi did not live long after this. Taking advantage of his absence from the capital, Digha-Kārāyana (cārāyana), the commander-in-chief, placed Viḍūḍabha, a son of Pasenadi, on the throne. The last interview of Pasenadi with the Buddha, as recorded in the Dhammadceiya Sutta,<sup>1</sup> took place when both of them were in their eightieth year.

In the Introduction to the Bhaddasāla Jātaka<sup>2</sup>, we read that Viḍūḍabha marched against the Śākyas on detection of the fraud committed by them by giving his father a slave woman to marry instead of a Śākya girl. He massacred the Śākyas brutally during the Buddha's lifetime. But this story does not tally with the account in the Mahāparinibbāna Suttanta in which the Śākyas of Kapilavatthu claimed and received a share of the Buddha's bodily remains.

By the machination of the Magadhan minister, Vassakāra, the unity of the Licchavis was completely destroyed and it became easy for Ajātasattu to conquer Vesāli. After the fall of the Vajjians, it may be supposed that their allies, the Mallas and the kings of Kāsi and Kosala with their vassals, came under the sway of Ajātasattu.

<sup>1</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, p. 118f.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 144f.

From the dynastic list of the kings in the Purāṇas, it appears that Prasenajit of Kośala, Udayana of Vatsa, and Pradyota of Avanti were succeeded each by four or five kings, after which their dynasties came to an end. But the early texts of Jainism and Buddhism have practically nothing to say about their successors after the Buddha's demise. The Pali canon and the *Milindapañha* record three events with reference to three chronological landmarks, e.g., the First Buddhist Council<sup>1</sup> held during the reign of Ajātasattu shortly after the Buddha's demise, the Second Council<sup>2</sup> held a century after that and the compilation of the Kathāvatthu during the reign of Dhammadhoka. Further, the Petavatthu mentions king Piṅgala of Suratṭha as a subordinate potentate in western India under the Moryas. This is a clear indication of the fact that at that time the Magadha empire under the Moryas included the three kingdoms of Kosala, Vamsa and Avanti.

The supremacy of Magadha which reached its zenith during the reign of Dhammadhoka, continued even in the midst of many vicissitudes through the reign of the Śungas and their successors.

<sup>1</sup> *Vinaya Piṭaka*, Cullavagga, Ch. 11.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, Ch. 12.

## CHAPTER III

### SOCIAL LIFE AND ECONOMIC CONDITIONS

The peoples and kings dealt with in the preceding chapter did not constitute the whole of the populace of Jambabhūti. From the point of view of social grades, they were the Khattiyas<sup>1</sup>—princes, warriors or nobles, who acquired the right to rule the country by the strength of their arms. The Indo-Aryan society was composed of three other social grades, namely, those represented by the Brāhmaṇas, Vessas and Suddas.<sup>2</sup> Those who accepted this social system based upon the four theoretical divisions of people, were broadly distinguished as Aryans from the rest of the populace looked down upon as Milakkhas or Milakkhus (= Mlecchas).<sup>3</sup> In the outer fringes of the Indo-Aryan society, thus conceived and constituted, lived the Milakkhas among whom, again, some sections of people came completely under the sway of members of the Indo-Aryan society, and some maintained their political

---

<sup>1</sup> Jacobi, *ZDMG.*, 48, 417—the Khattya formula of the Buddhists.

<sup>2</sup> B. C. Law, *Concepts of Buddhism*, Ch. III (*jāti* or caste).

<sup>3</sup> *Dīgha*, iii, p. 284; *Saṃyutta*, v, p. 486; *Jātaka*, vi, p. 207; *Sumanigalavilāsinī*, i, p. 176; *Paramatthaiotikā*, II, p. 236.

independence, adhering to their own social system. Those forming the first category are broadly classed as five *hinajātis* or 'low tribes' who followed *hinasippas* or 'low trades'. The Yonas and Kambojas of Uttarāpatha may be mentioned as two typical examples of those who belonged to the second category.

In contradistinction to the two upper grades of *Khattiya*,

*rāhmana*, the *Vinaya Sutta-ibhangā*<sup>1</sup> enumerates the five *hinajātis* as the Cāndāla, Veṇa, Nisāda, Rathakāra (= Camakāra) and Pukkusa. Of these 'low tribes', the Cāndālas are distinguished from the Pukkusas as corpse-throwers (*chāwachaddhakā*) from the methars and sweepers (*pupphachaddhakā*). The Veṇas are the workers in bamboo, the Rathakāras the workers in leather and the Nisādas the hunters (including the fowlers). In the opinion of Rhys Davids,<sup>2</sup> they were 'aboriginal tribesmen', the last three being hereditary craftsmen. In some<sup>3</sup> of the enumerations,<sup>4</sup> we have mention only of the first two just below the four recognised social grades of *Khattiya*, *Brāhmaṇa*, *Vessa* and *Sudda*, the implication being that the five despised classes were typified by them. From

<sup>1</sup> *Anguttara*, i, p. 107; ii, p. 85.

<sup>2</sup> *Buddhist India*, p. 54.

<sup>3</sup> *Anguttara*, i, p. 162; iii, p. 214: *Khattiyā-Brāhmaṇā-Vessā-Suddā-Cāndāla-Pukkusā*.

very manner of enumeration, it is clear that they were to be linked up with any of the recognised grades, it was with the Suddas. At least, in Pāṇini's Sūtra (ii, 4.10—śūdrānām vasitānām), they are classed with the Sudras. Here Pāṇini distinguishes the Śūdras into two classes: (1) the *aniravasita*, meaning those who were not considered outside the pale of Indo-Aryan society (*abahiskṛta-śūdrāḥ*), and (2) the *niravasita* or those who were considered outside thereof. As explained in the commentaries, the latter class comprised those Śūdras who were untouchables or pariahs. The Cāṇakas, Kārtapas and the Haddipas or malegrahis are illustrations of this class.

As illustrations of the *niravasita* Śūdras, Pāṇini's commentators mention cattle-herds (cattle-rearers), barbers, goldsmiths, potters, wood-carvers, blacksmiths, washermen, tailors, Bhillas and fishermen. When a compound is formed of names of the Śūdras outside the fold, it has a neuter singular form, e.g., *gopa-nāpitam*, *karmāra-kumbhakāram*; if names of the Śūdras outside the fold, it has a masculine dual or plural form, e.g., *Candāla-haddipau*.

In the Assalāyana Sutta, the Vāsudevas, Kambojas are mentioned as belonging to peoples whose social status was based on distinction only between the three grades of *ayya-*

or master and *dāsa* or slave, there being an impassable barrier at all between the classes.<sup>1</sup> The early texts of Jainism and Buddhism do not give us any insight into the social system of the Andhakas, Damilas and Milakkhas before they adopted the Indo-Aryan social scheme.

It will be seen that the social grades defined in the Indo-Aryan social scheme are all apparently based upon occupations. As such, they might be taken to denote classes (*senīs*), or even trade-guilds (*Pūgas*), rather than castes or races. The Brahmanist *Māṇḍūkya* Upanisad for the conception of society as an organism with the mouth, the arms, the thighs, and the feet as its four important functions, says, 'none superior, none inferior, the working of the entire organism dependent on the harmonious working of all the parts'. The mouth as symbol of culture and education is represented by the Brāhmaṇa; the arms as symbol of military strength by the Kshatriya; the administrative capacity by the Khattiya; the thighs as symbol of wealth and economic prosperity by the Vessa; and the feet as symbol of menial work by the Sudda,<sup>2</sup> the service being rendered by all the four in four different ways. To the Brahmanist, the society with its four classes was a natural order, and as

<sup>1</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 7010, 7011, 7012, 7013, 7014, 7015, 7016, 7017, 7018, 7019, 7020, 7021, 7022, 7023, 7024, 7025, 7026, 7027, 7028, 7029, 7030, 7031, 7032, 7033, 7034, 7035, 7036, 7037, 7038, 7039, 70310, 70311, 70312, 70313, 70314, 70315, 70316, 70317, 70318, 70319, 70320, 70321, 70322, 70323, 70324, 70325, 70326, 70327, 70328, 70329, 70330, 70331, 70332, 70333, 70334, 70335, 70336, 70337, 70338, 70339, 70340, 70341, 70342, 70343, 70344, 70345, 70346, 70347, 70348, 70349, 70350, 70351, 70352, 70353, 70354, 70355, 70356, 70357, 70358, 70359, 70360, 70361, 70362, 70363, 70364, 70365, 70366, 70367, 70368, 70369, 70370, 70371, 70372, 70373, 70374, 70375, 70376, 70377, 70378, 70379, 70380, 70381, 70382, 70383, 70384, 70385, 70386, 70387, 70388, 70389, 70390, 70391, 70392, 70393, 70394, 70395, 70396, 70397, 70398, 70399, 703100, 703101, 703102, 703103, 703104, 703105, 703106, 703107, 703108, 703109, 703110, 703111, 703112, 703113, 703114, 703115, 703116, 703117, 703118, 703119, 7031100, 7031101, 7031102, 7031103, 7031104, 7031105, 7031106, 7031107, 7031108, 7031109, 70311010, 70311011, 70311012, 70311013, 70311014, 70311015, 70311016, 70311017, 70311018, 70311019, 703110100, 703110101, 703110102, 703110103, 703110104, 703110105, 703110106, 703110107, 703110108, 703110109, 703110110, 703110111, 703110112, 703110113, 703110114, 703110115, 703110116, 703110117, 703110118, 703110119, 7031101100, 7031101101, 7031101102, 7031101103, 7031101104, 7031101105, 7031101106, 7031101107, 7031101108, 7031101109, 7031101110, 7031101111, 7031101112, 7031101113, 7031101114, 7031101115, 7031101116, 7031101117, 7031101118, 7031101119, 70311011100, 70311011101, 70311011102, 70311011103, 70311011104, 70311011105, 70311011106, 70311011107, 70311011108, 70311011109, 70311011110, 70311011111, 70311011112, 70311011113, 70311011114, 70311011115, 70311011116, 70311011117, 70311011118, 70311011119, 703110111100, 703110111101, 703110111102, 703110111103, 703110111104, 703110111105, 703110111106, 703110111107, 703110111108, 703110111109, 703110111110, 703110111111, 703110111112, 703110111113, 703110111114, 703110111115, 703110111116, 703110111117, 703110111118, 703110111119, 7031101111100, 7031101111101, 7031101111102, 7031101111103, 7031101111104, 7031101111105, 7031101111106, 7031101111107, 7031101111108, 7031101111109, 7031101111110, 7031101111111, 7031101111112, 7031101111113, 7031101111114, 7031101111115, 7031101111116, 7031101111117, 7031101111118, 7031101111119, 70311011111100, 70311011111101, 70311011111102, 70311011111103, 70311011111104, 70311011111105, 70311011111106, 70311011111107, 70311011111108, 70311011111109, 70311011111110, 70311011111111, 70311011111112, 70311011111113, 70311011111114, 70311011111115, 70311011111116, 70311011111117, 70311011111118, 70311011111119, 703110111111100, 703110111111101, 703110111111102, 703110111111103, 703110111111104, 703110111111105, 703110111111106, 703110111111107, 703110111111108, 703110111111109, 703110111111110, 703110111111111, 703110111111112, 703110111111113, 703110111111114, 703110111111115, 703110111111116, 703110111111117, 703110111111118, 703110111111119, 7031101111111100, 7031101111111101, 7031101111111102, 7031101111111103, 7031101111111104, 7031101111111105, 7031101111111106, 7031101111111107, 7031101111111108, 7031101111111109, 7031101111111110, 7031101111111111, 7031101111111112, 7031101111111113, 7031101111111114, 7031101111111115, 7031101111111116, 7031101111111117, 7031101111111118, 7031101111111119, 70311011111111100, 70311011111111101, 70311011111111102, 70311011111111103, 70311011111111104, 70311011111111105, 70311011111111106, 70311011111111107, 70311011111111108, 70311011111111109, 70311011111111110, 70311011111111111, 70311011111111112, 70311011111111113, 70311011111111114, 70311011111111115, 70311011111111116, 70311011111111117, 70311011111111118, 70311011111111119, 703110111111111100, 703110111111111101, 703110111111111102, 703110111111111103, 703110111111111104, 703110111111111105, 703110111111111106, 703110111111111107, 703110111111111108, 703110111111111109, 703110111111111110, 703110111111111111, 703110111111111112, 703110111111111113, 703110111111111114, 703110111111111115, 703110111111111116, 703110111111111117, 703110111111111118, 703110111111111119, 7031101111111111100, 7031101111111111101, 7031101111111111102, 7031101111111111103, 7031101111111111104, 7031101111111111105, 7031101111111111106, 7031101111111111107, 7031101111111111108, 7031101111111111109, 7031101111111111110, 7031101111111111111, 7031101111111111112, 7031101111111111113, 7031101111111111114, 7031101111111111115, 7031101111111111116, 7031101111111111117, 7031101111111111118, 7031101111111111119, 70311011111111111100, 70311011111111111101, 70311011111111111102, 70311011111111111103, 70311011111111111104, 70311011111111111105, 70311011111111111106, 70311011111111111107, 70311011111111111108, 70311011111111111109, 70311011111111111110, 70311011111111111111, 70311011111111111112, 70311011111111111113, 70311011111111111114, 70311011111111111115, 70311011111111111116, 70311011111111111117, 70311011111111111118, 70311011111111111119, 703110111111111111100, 703110111111111111101, 703110111111111111102, 703110111111111111103, 703110111111111111104, 703110111111111111105, 703110111111111111106, 703110111111111111107, 703110111111111111108, 703110111111111111109, 703110111111111111110, 703110111111111111111, 703110111111111111112, 703110111111111111113, 703110111111111111114, 703110111111111111115, 703110111111111111116, 703110111111111111117, 703110111111111111118, 703110111111111111119, 7031101111111111111100, 7031101111111111111101, 7031101111111111111102, 7031101111111111111103, 7031101111111111111104, 7031101111111111111105, 7031101111111111111106, 7031101111111111111107, 7031101111111111111108, 7031101111111111111109, 7031101111111111111110, 7031101111111111111111, 7031101111111111111112, 7031101111111111111113, 7031101111111111111114, 7031101111111111111115, 7031101111111111111116, 7031101111111111111117, 7031101111111111111118, 7031101111111111111119, 70311011111111111111100, 70311011111111111111101, 70311011111111111111102, 70311011111111111111103, 70311011111111111111104, 70311011111111111111105, 70311011111111111111106, 70311011111111111111107, 70311011111111111111108, 70311011111111111111109, 70311011111111111111110, 70311011111111111111111, 70311011111111111111112, 70311011111111111111113, 70311011111111111111114, 70311011111111111111115, 70311011111111111111116, 70311011111111111111117, 70311011111111111111118, 70311011111111111111119, 703110111111111111111100, 703110111111111111111101, 703110111111111111111102, 703110111111111111111103, 703110111111111111111104, 703110111111111111111105, 703110111111111111111106, 703110111111111111111107, 703110111111111111111108, 703110111111111111111109, 703110111111111111111110, 703110111111111111111111, 703110111111111111111112, 703110111111111111111113, 703110111111111111111114, 703110111111111111111115, 703110111111111111111116, 703110111111111111111117, 703110111111111111111118, 703110111111111111111119, 7031101111111111111111100, 7031101111111111111111101, 7031101111111111111111102, 7031101111111111111111103, 7031101111111111111111104, 7031101111111111111111105, 7031101111111111111111106, 7031101111111111111111107, 7031101111111111111111108, 7031101111111111111111109, 7031101111111111111111110, 7031101111111111111111111, 7031101111111111111111112, 7031101111111111111111113, 7031101111111111111111114, 7031101111111111111111115, 7031101111111111111111116, 7031101111111111111111117, 7031101111111111111111118, 7031101111111111111111119, 70311011111111111111111100, 70311011111111111111111101, 70311011111111111111111102, 70311011111111111111111103, 70311011111111111111111104, 70311011111111111111111105, 70311011111111111111111106, 70311011111111111111111107, 70311011111111111111111108, 70311011111111111111111109, 70311011111111111111111110, 70311011111111111111111111, 70311011111111111111111112, 70311011111111111111111113, 70311011111111111111111114, 70311011111111111111111115, 70311011111111111111111116, 70311011111111111111111117, 70311011111111111111111118, 70311011111111111111111119, 703110111111111111111111100, 703110111111111111111111101, 703110111111111111111111102, 703110111111111111111111103, 703110111111111111111111104, 703110111111111111111111105, 703110111111111111111111106, 703110111111111111111111107, 703110111111111111111111108, 703110111111111111111111109, 703110111111111111111111110, 703110111111111111111111111, 703110111111111111111111112, 703110111111111111111111113, 703110111111111111111111114, 703110111111111111111111115, 703110111111111111111111116, 703110111111111111111111117, 703110111111111111111111118, 703110111111111111111111119, 7031101111111111111111111100, 7031101111111111111111111101, 7031101111111111111111111102, 7031101111111111111111111103, 7031101111111111111111111104, 7031101111111111111111111105, 7031101111111111111111

such unalterable. The allegorical fancy led him to name the four divisions in terms of *vāṇṇa*, *jāti* or *nikāya*. In Pāli and other contemporary Indian texts these three terms occur as synonyms.<sup>1</sup> The organic conception of society and its allegorical expressions were attractive so long as these were kept within their reasonable bounds. The difficulties arose when the theory was sought to be put into practice and the allegories and metaphors were sought to be interpreted literally, e.g., the term *vāṇṇa* in the sense of distinctive colour or complexion, *jāti* in that of distinctive mode of birth, and *nikāya* in that of distinct species. The persistent Brahmanical tendency to give a hereditary character to occupational distinctions by birth-right led to the formation of castes and castes within castes. The early records of Jainas and Buddhists reveal a powerful movement of thought counteracting this rapidly increasing tendency.

As regards *vāṇṇa*, *jāti* or *nikāya* forming basis of social distinctions, each of them admitted a twofold interpretation: biological and psycho-ethical, biological and social or cultural. The *vāṇṇa* as a biological term meant colour or complexion and as a psycho-ethical term, a particular colouring or modification of soul or

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Concepts of Buddhism*, p. 11.

man's internal nature. The *jāti* as a biological term meant birth, pedigree or relationship, and as an ethical term, a particular mental or moral trait. Similarly the *nikāya* as a biological term meant a species, and as a social or cultural term, a distinct class, group or body. The claim of correspondence between the two meanings in all cases was absurd. There was no guarantee that one who was bright in complexion was in the same degree bright in internal nature; or that one who was of noble birth was also of noble disposition.

Taking *jāti* and *vappa* in their biological sense, Rhys Davids observed: 'The basis of social distinctions was relationship; or, as the Aryans, proud of their lighter colour, put it, colour. Their books constantly repeat a phrase as being common amongst the people—and it was certainly at least among the Aryan sections of people—which divided all the world, as they knew it, into four social grades, called colours (*vannā*). At the head were the Kshatriyas, the nobles, who claimed descent from the leaders of the Aryan tribes. [They were most particular as to the purity of their descent through seven generations, both on the father's and the mother's side; and are described as 'fair in colour, fine in presence, stately to behold'.] Then came the Brahmins, claiming descent from the sacrificing priests,

and though the majority of them followed other pursuits, they were equally with the nobles distinguished by high birth and clear complexion. Below these were the peasantry, the people, the Vaiśyas or Vessas. And last of all came the Śūdras, which included the bulk of the people of non-Aryan descent, who worked for hire, were engaged in handicraft or service, and were darker in colour.<sup>1</sup> In the Ambatṭha Sutta, *kanhā* (blackies) and *bandhupādāpaccā* (sprung from the feet of Brahmā) are freely applied to the Suddas as two terms of contempt. But the peoples of different complexions became so much intermingled in course of time that the brightness of colour in the natural sense of the term could rarely be relied upon as criterion of superiority of the social grade.

In order to prevent the loss of colour through intermixture and to preserve the national, racial, tribal or family type, it was deemed necessary to impose certain restrictions, rigid more or less, as to *connubium* or the right of inter-marriage and *commensality* or the right of eating together. Aiming at the production and preservation of the best possible type, not only from the physical and mental point of view but also from the family and cultural, the distinctions and restrictions were based also

upon *kula* and *gotta*, the former meaning the collection of cognates and agnates and the latter, the cultural heritage from a highly endowed Ṛṣi. The term *nikāya* may be taken to have comprehended the sense of both *kula* and *gotta*.

In the Pāli texts, however, the term, *gotta* has been employed in the sense of 'ancestry, lineage.' 'It includes all those descended, or supposed to be descended, from a common ancestor. A *gotta* name is always distinguished from the personal name, the name drawn from place of origin or residence, or from occupation, and lastly from the nickname. It probably means agnate rather than cognate.'<sup>2</sup> In support of this one may indeed cite the description given in the *Sutta-nipāta* of the Śākyas as: Ādīcā nāma gottena, Śākiyā nāma jātiyā, 'known as Ādityas by their ancestry, and as Śākyas by their birth'; and the introduction in the Jātakas of Dhanañjaya as 'a Kuru king of the Yudhiṣṭhila-gotta, 'of the stock: of Yudhiṣṭhira'.<sup>3</sup> But when Vāsudeva, a Khat-tiya, is described as Kāṇha, i.e., 'one belonging to the Kāṇhāyana-gotta',<sup>4</sup> the Buddha as Gotama, 'one belonging to the Gotama-gotta', and the Mallas as Vāsetṭhas, 'those belonging

<sup>1</sup> *Pāli-English Dictionary* (P.T.S. ed), *sub voce* *gottā*.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iii, p. 400.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 84.

to the Vāsetṭha-gotta', it cannot be maintained that the term *gotta* stands for ancestral lineage in view of the fact that Kaṇha, Gotama, Vāsetṭha and the rest are names of the ancient R̄sis who were mostly Brahmins and rarely Khattiyas by their birth. According to the Ambatṭha and Tevijja Suttas, the persons, such as Atṭhaka, Vāmaka, Vāmadeva, Vessāmitta, Yamataggi, Angirasa, Bhāradvāja, Vāsetṭha, Kassapa and Bhagu, from whom had originated the *gottas*, were all ancient sages who were composers and promulgators of the *mantas* or Vedic hymns. As Buddhaghosa suggests, the personal name was meant for recognition, and the *gotta* or surname for lineage (*paññattivasenu nāmaṁ pavenivasesa gottam*).<sup>1</sup> A history of the gradual division and sub-division of the original ten *gotras* into many *pravaras* and *sākhās* is given in the *Divyāvadāna*, Ch. xxxiii. Among the Sotthiya-class of Brahmins, many might have been led by sentiment to claim descent from those ancient sages. But it will always remain open whether such descent implied a line of agnates or a broken succession of teachers and pupils. In the case of *gotta*, too, there was confusion between the ancestral and cultural.

<sup>1</sup> *Sumanasalavilāśini*, i, p. 257.

Besides *vappa*, *jāti*, *gotta*, *bhoga* (wealth),<sup>1</sup> and *kula*, we have mention in the early Pāli texts of *māna* or prestige as determining a person's family or social status,<sup>2</sup> of which the testing was marriage factor of boys or girls.<sup>3</sup>

As for the four *vappas* forming the four broad divisions of the Indo-Aryan society, it should be noted at the outset that the usual order of enumeration, was: the Brāhmaṇas, the Kṣatriyas or Rājanyas, the Vaiśyas and the Śūdras. In the early Buddhist texts, on the other hand, the order of the first two *vappas* was reversed with the result that the Khattiyas came to be placed first and the Brāhmaṇas just next to them. As regards the remaining two *vappas*, the order was left undisturbed. The Jainas and Buddhists contended for the precedence of the Khattiyas over the Brāhmaṇas on the Brahmanist's own ground, i.e., the purity of birth through seven generations on the father's as well as the mother's side. The history of the superiorities between these two communities is indeed as old as the remote Vedic times; some of the earlier Upaniṣads assert the intellectual and spiritual ground

<sup>1</sup> *Dhammapada-ṭṭhakathā*, ii, p. 218: *jātiyā* & *saśīlo*.

<sup>2</sup> *Dīghanikā*, i, p. 99: *jātiwādo iti pi gotivādo iti pi*.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 99: *dvāha-vivāha-vinibandhamp*.

triyas were openly claimed to have been entitled to a superior position.<sup>1</sup> Throughout the early Jaina and Buddhist texts, a sharp distinction was sought to be drawn between the Brāhmaṇas as they ought to have been and the Brāhmaṇas as they actually were, that is to say, between the ideal and the fact. In drawing a correct picture of the social life in India as revealed in the ancient Jain and Buddhist texts, we are concerned with the Brāhmaṇas as they actually were. As for the other view, even on the frank admission on the part of the Jainas and Brāhmaṇas, there were ideally perfect Brāhmaṇas in the past. Their criterion was applied to the Brāhmaṇas of the time who became degenerated on account of their gradual deviations from the ancient path of purity or morals, absence of greed, contentment and magnanimity. What they themselves aspired to be was the ideally perfect Brāhmaṇa. When the Brāhmaṇa stood theoretically for the ideal, the nature of the claim was not that all those who passed in society as Brāhmaṇas lived or were capable of living up to that ideal. Similarly, when the Khattiyas contended for the ideal of Jinahood or Buddhahood, the nature of the claim was not that all those who passed in society under the name of Khattiyas became or were capable of becoming Jinas or Buddhas. The claim indeed was that it was among the

two upper divisions that there lay the real possibility of the birth of highly endowed persons capable of realising the ideal or ideals and remoulding human civilisation.

In the Dasa-brāhmaṇa-Jātaka, Vidhura, the wise man of the Kuru court, divides the Brāhmaṇas into ten categories, classes or types (*dasa-brāhmaṇa-jātiyo*) and sweepingly criticises them as placed in each category: the Brahmins who went about like physicians (*tikicchakasamā*) with sacks containing sanctified and therefore important medicinal roots and herbs, offering themselves to cure diseases for money. Those who like servants (*paricārakasamā*) used to ring little bells as they went before as heralds of kings and their ministers, served as messengers or even followed the calling of wagon-drivers. Those who in the garb of ascetics behaved like tax-collectors (*niggāhakasamā*), determined not to leave the place until something was given to them by way of alms: Those who begged alms in another garb of ascetics with long nails and hairs on the body, etc., and covered with dust and dirt were like diggers of the soil for uprooting the stumps (*khāṇughātasamā*). Those who like tradesmen (*vāṇijakasamā*) used to sell various fruits, planks, wood, sweets, scents, honey and ointment. Those who like the Ambatṭhas and the Vessas carried on agricultural trade, did farming, gave away their daughters for money

and acted as matchmakers. The Purohitas who interpreted omens, castrated and branded animals and acted as butchers (*go-ghātakā*). Those who armed with the sword and the shield and axe guarded the business-quarter and led the caravans through roads infested with robbers and thus resembled the Gopas and Nisādas. Those who in the garb of hermits behaved like hunters (*luddakasamā*), killed hares, cats, lizards, fish and tortoises. The Yājñikas who in performing the Somayāga for lucre acted like bathers (*malamajjanasamā*) to the kings.

Similarly the criticism of the Brahmin position offered in the Pali Vāsettha Sutta clearly implies that the Brāhmaṇas of the time followed the pursuits of agriculturists (*kassakā*), craftsmen (*sippikā*), order-carriers (*pessikā*), tradesmen (*vāṇijā*), soldiers (*yodhājīvā*), sacrificers (*yājakā*) and landlords (*rājaññā*) as various means of their livelihood.<sup>1</sup>

In the Fragment on Silas, it is clearly stated that the Brāhmaṇas, secular as well as religious, earned their livelihood by such low pursuits as those of apothecaries, druggists, physicians and surgeons, priests, occultists and sorcerers, soothsayers, fortune-tellers, palmists, fortellers, interpreters of dreams and signs and

---

<sup>1</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, p. 122; Fick, *Social Organisation*, p. 221f.

emens, calendar-makers, astrologers, appraisers, selectors of lucky sites for the erection of home-steads and buildings and edifices, architects, collectors of alms by diverse tricks and clever devices, story-tellers and ballad-reciters, land-holders, traders, cattle-breeders, farmers, match-makers and messengers. Although they belonged to a religious order, stood for the highest religious ideal, and were expected to live up to that ideal, in practice they appeared as hoarders of wealth and as persons who cared to live the aristocratic life of luxury and of pleasure and of ease and to witness and take part in all worldly amusements, games and sports, feasts and festivities.<sup>1</sup>

/A more correct picture of the Brahmin position in the Indo-Aryan society of the Age may be drawn on the basis of the Buddha's classification of the Brāhmaṇas into five types: *Brahmasamā*, or those resembling the Brahmā; *Devasamā*, or those resembling the gods; *Mariyādā*, or those respecting their ancient tradition; *Sambhinna-mariyādā*, or those disregarding their ancient tradition; and *Brāhmaṇa-candālā*, or those who lived a vulgar life. In the first category are placed the Brāhmaṇas of high and pure birth through seven generations on both the father's and the mother's side, whc

---

*Agga*, i, p. 4f.; *Dialogues of the Buddha*, i, p. 6f.

after the practice of brahmacariyā and the complete study of the four Vedas with all the auxiliary works, took up the position of teachers, depending for their livelihood only on alms, and thereafter renounced the world to live the life of lonely meditation and holy communion. In the second category, are placed those Brāhmaṇas who differed from the former only in one respect, namely, that in the second stage of life they took up the position of married householders and as such they married girls only from their own class. They met their wives in proper time only for the purpose of procreation. Otherwise they lived a life of moral rectitude. In the third category, are placed those Brāhmaṇas who differed from those of the second class only in one respect, namely, that they did not renounce the world in the third stage of life but continued to live a household life, strictly adhering to their ancient tradition. In the fourth category, are placed those Brāhmaṇas who differed from those of the third class only in this respect that they married girls from all social grades, the das and untouchables included, and indulged in sexual intercourse for the purpose of creation as well as sensual pleasure. In the fifth or last category, are placed those Brāhmaṇas who differed from those of the fourth class only in this respect that besides marrying

girls from all social grades, they adopted with impunity all manner of pursuits, agriculture, trade, cattle-breeding, fighting as soldiers, government service and the rest, as a means of livelihood (*sabbakammehi jīvitam kappeti*).<sup>1</sup>

The second classification of the Brāhmaṇas is interesting and important as presenting two sides of the picture in contrast, on one side, supreme worth, moral elevation, intellectual perfection and spiritual fervour, and on the other, worthlessness, moral degradation, dullness and worldly-mindedness.

So far as occupation of the Brāhmaṇas as a basis of social distinction was concerned, we find that the study of the Vedas with all the auxiliary sciences and arts, the teaching of the Vedas along with all sciences and arts useful to the State and to the people at large, and the office of a priest appertaining to the religious part of all social ceremonies constituted their monopoly. If the Khattiyas, Vessas, or even Suddas appeared as their rivals as teachers, it was only in the field of ethics and spirituality.

In speaking of the Brāhmaṇas, the early Jain and Buddhist books place them either in the usual social environment or in the hermitages. In the first connection, they are introduced either as those who were in the ser-

of the king (*rājakammikā*), or as those who had followed different professions of their own. In the second connection, they are introduced as those who went out of the social environments and lived the life of *tāpasas* or *isis* in forest homes called *assamas* with or without their families and resident pupils. Of those in service of the king, the most important was the *Purohita*. Next to him in importance were the *amaccas* or *mahāmattas* (councillors and ministers). The *Yācakas* (sacrificers) and others were no better than assistants in the office of the *Purohita*. Partly in connection with the king, they held the position of *mahāsālas* or heads of Vedic institutions. They came to represent the *sot-thiya* class of Brāhmaṇas who were occasionally employed by the kings as *dūtas* (ambassadors). The Brahmins also filled the office of *senāpatis* (generals), and *issatthas*, or *yodhājīvas* (soldiers), chariot-drivers, trainers of elephants, legal experts and judges. To the people in general they rendered services as *purohitas* and priests, as physicians and druggists, as astronomers and architects, as ballad-reciters and matchmakers. They pursued various other vocations of life as well in their own independent capacities as private citizens. The economic position of the Brāhmaṇas as a class, other than those in high royal service, the *mahāsālas*, and the few farmers and traders, could not but be

poor as they were wholly dependent on an uncertain income from fees, gifts, and alms.

The Purohita occupied a peculiar position in the court. Though in the service of the king, he was not counted among the king's officers. But he was partly entrusted with official functions and surpassed the royal officers in many respects in importance and influence.<sup>1</sup> As house-priest of the king, the Purohita advised him in secular and spiritual matters (*athadhammānusāsako*). He acted as the *ācariya* or preceptor, the sacrificial priest and the house-priest.<sup>2</sup> He was the person to invoke the favour of the gods on behalf of the king or his family, and it was also in his power to do him harm. He performed the sacrifice with the assistance of other Brāhmaṇas to guard against misfortunes suggested through bad dreams, or through some unusual natural phenomena.<sup>3</sup> He was expected to be able to predict the result of all important undertakings on the part of the king by means of signs or constellations of stars. The Purohita was preferably appointed from among the teachers, playmates, comrades or class-fellows of the king, so that he might be always trusted and relied upon as the best friend

<sup>1</sup> Fick, *op. cit.*, p. 164.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, ii, p. 376; iv, p. 270; v, p. 127.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 334f.; ii, p. 46.

in weal and woe.<sup>1</sup> The guarding of the king's treasures was part of his duties.<sup>2</sup> In one instance, he is described as the king's officer (*rājakammika*);<sup>3</sup> in another, he replaces the *Senāpati* in the matter of judicial duties.<sup>4</sup>

The office of the *Purohita* was not necessarily hereditary, though the books record instances where it was held by the same family for generations together to justify the appellation, *purohitakula*.<sup>5</sup> *Bāvari*, for instance, was born in the family of Pasenadi's *Purohita*, and was the teacher of Pasenadi during his boyhood.<sup>6</sup> But there are many other instances where the king was at liberty to appoint his own *Purohita*. It was, however, considered a legitimate expectation that after the death of *Purohita* he would be succeeded in his post by his son. When Govinda, the *Purohita* of king Disampati of Videha, died, his son Jotipāla was appointed in his post at the suggestion of the crown-prince, *Renu*. The *Purohitas* of the six sub-kings were trained by Mahāgovinda.<sup>7</sup> In the *Susima-Jātaka*,<sup>8</sup> we read that after the death of the

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, i, p. 289; ii, p. 282; iii, p. 31.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, p. 513f.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 439.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 187f.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 437.

<sup>6</sup> *Paramatthajotikā*, II, p. 580.

<sup>7</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 230f.; *Ānguttara*, iii, p. 373.

<sup>8</sup> *Jātaka*, ii, p. 46f.

Purohita other Brāhmaṇas objected to the consecration of the State elephant by his son on the ground that he was still too young and was wanting in scriptural knowledge. The main source of income of the Purohitas was the fees and gifts received from the kings on all festive occasions and at the time of sacrifices. The gifts included land-endowments, women, maidens, slaves, male and female, and live-stocks. Fick seems to be right in his suggestion that here lay the origin of the landed property and worldly prosperity of the Purohitas. Among the Purohitas appointed from among the Brāhmaṇas versed in the Vedic lore, Mahāgovinda, Bāvari and others may be singled out as those who were Brahmasama-brāhmaṇas. There were others who were either unworthy of the office they held or whose virtue did not come up to the Brahmanic ideal.

In the monarchies, the Brahmins figure among the *umaccas* and *mahāmāttas*<sup>1</sup> who, too, were rich and influential by virtue of the office held by them. The strength and quality of administration largely depended on their honesty and efficiency. They were the great diplomats and specialists in the rules of royal polity. In the Mahāparinibbāna Suttanta, we have mention of Sunidha and Vassakāra as two able Brāh-

māṇa ministers of king Ajātasattu under whose supervision the village of Pāṭaligāma was fortified and the city of Pāṭaliputta was built. It was again by the tactful machination of Vassakāra that the strong unity of the Vajjian confederacy was broken and the Vajjis could be easily conquered. Cāṇakya under whose guidance Candragupta was able to found the powerful Moriyan empire in India, belonged to this official rank.

The Sarabhaṅga-Jātaka speaks of Jotipāla, son of the Purohita of the king of Benares by a Brahmin wife, who was appointed commander-in-chief ~~because~~ for his great mastery and skill in archery. When he was first appointed, his ~~army~~ was one thousand *kahā-pañas* and after he had defeated 500 archers in an open contest, it was increased to one hundred thousand. In appreciation of his high proficiency, all the people of Kāśī offered him money, which amounted to eighteen hundred crores.<sup>1</sup>

In the Buddha's time, there lived at Ekanālā in Dakkhinagiri a Brāhmaṇa of the Bhāradvāja clan, who was a rich agriculturist. Five hundred ploughs were needed to cultivate the fields owned by him. On the day of the festive sowing (māngalavappa), he used to distribute

---

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 127f.

food to a very large number of people.<sup>1</sup> The Somadatta-Jātaka, on the other hand, relates the story of a poor Brāhmaṇa farmer who himself ploughed his field and whose son was a *pādamūlika* or menial in a royal court.<sup>2</sup> The Jātakas record other instances where the Brāhmaṇa farmers drove the plough with their own hands.<sup>3</sup>

In the Mahāsutasoma-Jātaka, we see that a wealthy Brāhmaṇa was engaged in trade. He carried on trade between the east-end and west-end of India, transporting his goods in 500 wagons.<sup>4</sup> We read also of ordinary Brāhmaṇa tradesmen and hawkers who roamed about in the country for wares.<sup>5</sup>

The Phandana-Jātaka relates the story of a Brāhmaṇa who took to the profession of a carpenter (*vaddhaki*), collecting wood from the forest and making wagons for sale.<sup>6</sup> In a rare instance, we find that a Brāhmaṇa youth who lived in a frontier village, earned his livelihood by selling the hunted beasts.<sup>7</sup> The reason, as suggested by Fick,<sup>8</sup> was purely economic.

<sup>1</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, Kasi-Bhāradvāja Sutta; *Samyutta*, i, p. 171f.; E. J. Thomas, *The Life of Buddha*, p. 117.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, ii, p. 165.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, p. 162; iv, p. 276.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, v, p. 471.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 15.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 200.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 207.

<sup>8</sup> Fick, *op. cit.*, p. 247.

Some of the Jātakas speak of Brāhmaṇas and Brāhmaṇa family of great wealth and influence (*addhā, mahaddhanā, mahābhogā, mahā-sālakulā*). They mention some Brāhmaṇas whose wealth amounted to eighty crores (*asiti-koti-dhanavibhavā*).<sup>1</sup>

According to Pali scholiasts, the Mahāsāla-Brāhmaṇas were those who were men of substance (*mahāsārā*), whose hoarded wealth amounted to eighty crores.<sup>2</sup> But the Mahāgovinda Suttanta describes them as heads of the Vedic colleges.<sup>3</sup> The Pali stock list of eminent Kosalan Brāhmaṇa Mahāsālas contained the names of Caṇki, Tārukha, Pokkharasāti, Jāṇussoṇi, Todeyya and Lohicca. Of them, Caṇki was established at Opasāda, Tārukha at Icchānāṅkala, Pokkharasāti at Ukkatṭhā, Jāṇussoṇi at Sāvatthī, Todeyya at Tudigāma and Lohicca at Sālāvatī. Each of them lived in a royal domain, given to him as a royal fief by king Pasenadi.<sup>4</sup> Similarly we read of Kūṭadanta who was established at Khāṇumata in Magadha and of Sopadanda who was established at Campā. They lived each in a royal domain, given to him as a royal fief by king Bimbisāra.<sup>5</sup> The localities where

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, ii, p. 272; iv, pp. 15, 22.

<sup>2</sup> *Paramatthajatikā*, II, p. 313.

<sup>3</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 33.

<sup>4</sup> Law, *Srāvasti*, p. 15.

<sup>5</sup> Law, *Rājagṛha*, p. 36; *Dīgha*, i, pp. 111, 127.

they lived with their disciples became known as Brāhmaṇagāmas.

As observed elsewhere,<sup>1</sup> these Brāhmaṇas became rich and powerful only because of certain permanent land-grants and endowments, made by the kings. The localities, as the description goes, full of life and covered with much grassy land, woodland and corn fields around Northern India, were dotted over with such Brāhmaṇagāmas. The Brāhmaṇas as Maṅkāśālas had a control over them as regards their revenue and the judicial and the civil administration, as was determined by the terms of royal grants (*rājadeyyam brahmadeyyam*). The Purohitas in respect of learning and social status belonged to this very class of Brahmins.

In the Brāhmaṇa texts, two privileges are claimed for the Brāhmaṇas, namely, unmoles-tability and immunity from execution. They were not required to pay rents in so far as the land-endowments were concerned. The Pali texts do not bear testimony to any privileged position enjoyed by them in the eye of the law. It is clearly stated in the Madhura Sutta that a criminal, whether a Brāhmaṇa or not, was liable to execution.<sup>2</sup> The Jātakas definitely speak of the execution of Brāhmaṇas.<sup>3</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Śāṅkavati*, p. 15; Fick, *op. cit.*, p. 244.

<sup>2</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, p. 83f.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, i, p. 430; Fick, *op. cit.*, p. 212.

early Buddhist and Jain texts record no instances where the Brāhmaṇas discharged worldly duties along with sacerdotal functions.

It should also be noted that even in the Buddha's time, the Udicca Brāhmaṇas, meaning the Brāhmaṇas who either belonged to Kuru-Pañcāla<sup>1</sup> or those who claimed descent from them, occupied a pre-eminent position among the Brāhmaṇas as a class.<sup>2</sup> The epithet *brahmabandhu* (Brahmā's favourite) was applied at first as a term of contempt to the Brāhmaṇas of Magadha.<sup>3</sup> But their position gradually improved so far that in the Āranyaka period their views were quoted with respect.<sup>4</sup>

The Khattiyaś represented the ruling class, family, tribe or clan, claiming the Aryan descent. Wherever they founded a territory or colony, they lived either under a monarchical or a tribal, oligarchical or republican form of government. In monarchies, the kings were their best representatives. The members of a royal family passed as Khattiyaś. In oligarchies, such as those of the Licchavis, Mallas and Śākyas, all the members bore the family title of *rājā*, which means a leading member of the

<sup>1</sup> JRAS., 1920, 99f.

<sup>2</sup> Jātaka, i, pp. 324, 356, etc.

<sup>3</sup> Aitareya-Brāhmaṇa, vii, 27; Kātyāyana Śrautaśūtra, xxii, 4.22; Lāṭyāyana, viii, 6.28; Flick, op. cit., p. 215.

<sup>4</sup> Vedic Index, ii, p. 116.

ruling clan. The royal families originated from the reigning kings through succession.

The Khattiyas as a class were expected to be warriors by their training and occupation. They had, theoretically at least, the right to rule, maintaining internal order and peace and protecting their territories against their enemy. But the reigning king was not necessarily a man of the Khattiya family. In the Jātakas we read that where the reigning kings having been considered unworthy of the throne, the people in a body replaced them each by a Brāhmaṇa.<sup>1</sup> In the event of a king's death he was generally succeeded by the *Uparājā* (viceroy) appointed by him. The *Uparājā* might be either the deceased king's younger brother or his eldest son by his chief queen. When, after the death of Mahākamsa of Asitañjana, his elder son, Kamsa, became king, he made his younger brother, Upakamsa, the *Uparājā*. The same thing happened as to Sāgara, king of Madhurā, and his younger brother, Upasāgara.<sup>2</sup> Among the ten sons of Upasāgara and Devagabbhā, one was anointed as king-overlord and the rest were to take up the position of subordinate potentates.<sup>3</sup> As a rule, as pointed out by Fick, the sons of the

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, i, p. 326.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 79.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 81f.

queen consort (*aggamahesi*), who was to be of the same caste as the king, were considered legitimate heirs to the throne, the eldest or fittest of them being chosen for kingship. But this legitimacy was not always regarded as an essential condition.<sup>1</sup> In one instance, we find that the reigning king appointed the son of a woman wood-gatherer as the *Uparājā*, who duly succeeded to the throne.<sup>2</sup> The Mudupāṇi-Jātaka offers us an instance where the king made his nephew (sister's son) and son-in-law his successor.<sup>3</sup> During the reign of king Bhatiya of Magadha, his son Bimbisāra ruled the newly conquered kingdom of Aṅga as his viceroy.

In the absence of the *Uparājā* appointed by the deceased king, the kingdom usually devolved on his son, preferably on the eldest son, by his chief queen. When a king died without an heir, the duty fell upon the Purohita to find out a worthy successor.<sup>4</sup> In all cases, the formal anointment of a person as king depended upon the consent and combined will of the courtiers of the deceased king and his subjects.

The king was freely recognised as the foremost of men (*rājā mukham manussānam*).<sup>5</sup> The fan, diadem, sword, umbrella and slipper constituted the five regalia (*pañcavidhakakudhā*)

<sup>1</sup> Fick, *op. cit.*, p. 123.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, i, p. 133; iv, p. 148.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 323f.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, p. 238; cf. iv, p. 31.

<sup>5</sup> *Vinaya Mahāvagga*, vi, 35.8.

The majesty of his person, brightness in his appearance, stateliness in his presence; power in his will, force in his command and pomp attaching to his court made the position of the king a highly coveted one among men; so also was the case of the queen among women. The tasting of sumptuous food and drink, dalliances with the ladies of the harem, sleeping on a rich and costly bed, entertainment given by the courtesans excelling in the art of dancing, singing and instrumental music, and unrestrained joy in a processional drive to the royal pleasure-garden are mentioned and described as the five private enjoyments by which a person might be attracted to kingship.<sup>1</sup>

In theory a king of a Khattiya family was to marry a princess from the royal house of equal social rank. In practice, however, he could or did actually marry girls and women from all social grades at his sweet will and promote them to the rank of his queens. The number of queens did not generally exceed three or five.<sup>2</sup> When a vacancy occurred, specially in the rank of the chief queen, it was filled up by promotion or

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 505f.

<sup>2</sup> King Udena of Varsa, for instance, had five queens: Sāmāvati, the adopted daughter of his treasurer Ghosaka, Māgandiyā, a Brahmin girl, Gopālamātā, daughter of a peasant, Vāsuladattā, daughter of Candapajjota and Sāgarikā, daughter of a Sinhalese king. See Malalasekera, *op. cit.*; i, p. 379f; Law, *Ancient Mid-Indian Kṣatriya Tribes*, p. 136.

new appointment. The royal harem was filled with maidens and women from all social grades. The high-class courtesans who were not allowed to live within the palace compound, came also into close personal contact with the king. The books contain instances where, even in historical times, princes were begotten on them, e.g., Prince Abhaya, son of Bimbisāra, was born of Āmbapāli. The Jātakas mention an instance in which Vāsudeva saw a Candālī on his way to the park, and in spite of her low birth, married her, making her his chief queen. Her son, Sivi, succeeded to the throne of Dvāravatī. Some of the kings were so profligate in their ways that no handsome women could escape them. The fate of the captured queens depended on the victor's whims and caprices. In the new household, they sometimes had to exchange places with their maids. Even the father employed the dancing girls to persuade his sons to indulge in worldly pleasures. The want of a male issue to succeed to the throne was keenly felt in the royal family as well as by the subjects. In an extraordinary case, the king having no son by any of the women in his harem, let out in the streets the queens and all, for a week from time to time under a religious sanction (*dhammanāṭaka*).<sup>1</sup> In Pali literature,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 279.

the birth of king Cāṇḍapajjota<sup>1</sup> is said to have resulted from an appointment and holy contact. Thus the king with the princes and courtiers as well as landed and business aristocrats may be shown to have played the part of subverters of the social order and social morality. With them polygamy was the rule<sup>2</sup> and monogamy the exception, with the result that the princes of the royal blood and sons of the Brahmins were distinguished by the names of their mothers, e.g., Ajātasattu, Vedehiputta, Sāriputta, Moggaliputta, even the Barhut Gateway inscription of Dhanabhūti bearing a clear testimony to this. It was a custom among the Vajjis, as noted before, to make courtesans (*ganikās*) from girls of perfect beauty.

The marrying of the maternal uncle's daughter was prevalent in some of the royal families<sup>3</sup>, as also among certain ruling clans, such as, the Śākyas and Koliyas.<sup>4</sup> The tradition of polyandry is associated, in the *Jātakas* and Great Epic, with the five sons of Pāṇḍu and Kāñhā, described in the former as daughter of the king of Kāśī, and in the latter as daughter of king Drupada. The Pali legend of the Śākyas

<sup>1</sup> *Buddhistic Studies*, ed. by B. G. Law, Chap. VII.

<sup>2</sup> Even a righteous king like Aśoka had queens more than one.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, ii, p. 323.

<sup>4</sup> Prince Siddhārtha married Rāhulamātā who was his maternal uncle's daughter.

of their ancestors as princes of the Okkāka family, under the pressure of circumstances, married their own sisters.<sup>1</sup> The legend records only this without implying that this form of marriage was customary among the Śākyas. The prevalence of this is, as a pre-historic custom, is presupposed indeed, by the Dasaratha-Jātaka<sup>2</sup> and the story of Yama and Yamī in the Rgveda.

The princes of the royal families were generally eager, at the instigation of their mothers, to secure the throne at the expense of their brothers, the reigning kings. When they showed such a tendency or when their intrigue was detected, the king either imprisoned them or sent them to exile, or made them *Uparājās*, allowing them to actively participate in the administration of the kingdom, or a part of it. In the Buddha's time, Prince Viḍūḍabha seized his father's throne with the aid of the general, Dīghakārāyaḥa.

In the Pali Suttas, kings are distinguished as belonging to three ranks: *cakkavatti* or overlord, *issara* or *adhipati*, and *padesarājā*. In all the three ranks, they were absolute rulers or despots, benevolent or otherwise, so far as the internal administration of the empire, kingdom or province, was concerned. The main

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 426; *Sumanāgalavilāśini*, i, p. 258.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 123f.

sources of their income were the land duties on trade commodities, unclaimed presents on festive occasions. They appear to have owned private lands, and ~~they~~<sup>the king</sup> ploughing or sowing by them ~~as~~<sup>and</sup> by other big farmers, was one of the chief festivals of the year.<sup>1</sup> The conquest of a kingdom and annexation of a new territory enabled the victors to obtain abundant spoils. The victory celebrations were one of the memorable festive occasions. Hunting of deer was a favourite pastime of many kings. The happiness and joy of the subjects greatly depended on the good rule and righteousness on the part of the ruler, and their misery and distress on his misrule.<sup>2</sup> The chariots of the kings were drawn by four horses of superior breed, all-white in colour. The state-elephant preferably all-white, was a special object of veneration, and according to popular belief, the welfare of the kingdom or territory depended on its auspicious presence. The famine due to drought was sought to be remedied by the presence of such elephants.<sup>3</sup> The state-elephant bore special names, e.g., Pundarika.<sup>4</sup> The Indian army was composed of the elephant-riders,

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 167.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, v, p. 98.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 365f.

<sup>4</sup> Pundarika was the name of the state-elephant of king Pasenadi.

savāry, charioteers and infantry. The mock-fights, ~~re~~ calls, marching of troops through the streets, and the like were no doubt enjoyable sights. The seasonal festivals, announced from time to time, were observed. The *Samajjās* or *Samājas* afforded occasions for big feasts, musical entertainments, dramas, operas, ballad-recitations, improvisation of verses, wrestling, boutting, duels, bull-fights, buffalo-fights, cock-fights, and the rest. The remission of taxes and release of prisoners were two of the traditional acts of the king's mercy. The construction of roads and bridges, excavation of tanks, sinking of wells, planting of shade-trees, erection of public halls, laying out of parks and gardens, maintenance of alms houses, provisions against drought and famine in the shape of public granaries and storehouses were the most notable among the works of social piety. The king was not only the head of the executive but also the supreme administrator of justice and final court of appeal for criminal cases. In peace-time, the *Senāpatis*, as the king's deputies, functioned as judges.<sup>1</sup> As for the administration of criminal justice, the best system was one which prevailed among the Vajjians, which consisted of several courts, the lowest being represented by the *Vohārikas* and the highest

---

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, ii, p. 186.

by the *rājā* or President. One of the intermediate courts was a tribunal constituted by representatives of the eight confederate clans (*atthakulikā*). The lower court could acquit the accused on its own authority but in order to punish him, had to refer the case to the next higher court.<sup>1</sup>

Along with the prevention of famine, the suppression of thieves (*corā*) was one of the principal tests of a successful reign. The famines, distinguished in the *Divyāvadāna* (p. 131) into three kinds—Cañcu, Śvetāsthi (= Pali *Setatthika*)<sup>2</sup> and Śalākāvṛtti, occurred mainly on account of the dearth of rain-water (*anāvṛsti*). But the failure of crops or scarcity of food was due as well to floods, the action of fire and similar other causes. The *Divyāvadāna* preserves a tradition of a twelve-year-famine of the Śvetāsthi type which caused a dire distress to the people of Kāsi; the *Vinaya-Piṭaka* mentions a famine which broke out in Northern India during the Buddha's time and the Jaina tradition refers to one during the reign of Candagutta Moriya.

The *coras*, as distinguished from ordinary thieves<sup>3</sup>, were as follows:—burglars (*sandhichedakā*), plunderers of villages (*gāmaghātacorā*), highway robbers (*panthaghātacorā*), message-

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Some Kṣatriya Tribes of Ancient India*, pp. 102-103.

<sup>2</sup> *Vinaya*, iii, p. 6; iv, p. 23.

<sup>3</sup> *Samyutta*, ii, p. 188.

senders (*pesanakacorā*) and criminal tribes living in forests (*atavicorā*). They were either isolated individuals or formed different gangs, each under a ring-leader (*corajettha*). The criminal laws provided for brutal and horrible forms of punishment, including putting on stakes and throwing down from a precipice, from which circumstances the precipice of a Rājagaha hill became known as Corapapāta. Sometimes the oppressive rulers or their officers were in league with the gangs of thieves or robbers. In a solitary instance, an educated Brahmin youth turned out to be a fierce highway robber and became an object of great terror to the people of Kosala and even to so powerful a king as Pasenadi.<sup>1</sup> Among the epidemics, the most virulent was known as *ahivātakaroga*, which was a kind of plague that broke out at Rājagaha, Sāvatthī and other places. The free supply of medicinal roots, fruits and herbs was another act of social piety on the part of the righteous king.<sup>2</sup>

The Ratthikas, Pettanikas and Bhojakas were three classes of royal officers as well as hereditary feudal lords or landowners and landholders. They seem to have been represented mostly by the Khattiyas.

<sup>1</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, p. 101f.

<sup>2</sup> Law, Drugs and Diseases known to the early Buddhists, in *Woolner Commemoration Volume*, p. 168.

Though the Khattiyas were the warriors *par excellence*, the recruits to the military regiments of a kingdom or a territory were not necessarily all Khattiyas. As noted before, even those born of Brāhmaṇa families adopted the profession of *Yodhājīvas*. In the Jātakas, however, the Uggaputtas occupying superior military ranks are all described as Khattiyas. In a notable instance, we find that a Khattiya prince renounced his right to kingship in favour of his sister and took to trade as his profession on this condition, however, that his brothers, the reigning kings, would exempt him from the payment of duties and taxes.<sup>1</sup> This fact goes only to prove that even the Khattiya traders, if not otherwise exempted, were as much liable to pay duties and taxes as other members of the trade. The same as to the gahapatis whether they were Khattiyas, Brāhmaṇas or Vessas. There were wealthy and influential persons among the Khattiyas as among other classes of people. It is only those Khattiyas, among whom the tribal tradition formed a strong social tie, who were naturally inclined towards endogamy and strict adherence to the rules of commensality.

✓ Though the term *gahapati* in its general sense was applicable to all who lived the life of

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 84.

a householder, irrespective of classes or social grades, by general usage it was restricted to the setthis or bankers who were the best representatives of the Vessas. They were the gahapatis *par excellence*, just as the Khattiyas were the warriors *par excellence*. There are single instances of gahapatis: Anāthapindika, Mendaka, Citta, Nakulapitā, Potaliya, Sandhāna and Hāliddhikāni, where gahapati 'almost assumes the function of a title'.<sup>1</sup> The canonical Pali texts speak often of the Khattiya-mahāsālas or wealthy nobles, Brāhmaṇa-mahāsālas or wealthy Brahmins and Gahapati-mahāsālas or wealthy gentry.<sup>2</sup> Buddhaghosa gives the minimum monetary strength of each of the three classes of mahāsālas, that of the Khattiya being the highest.<sup>3</sup> The gahapatis as financiers figured as highly important persons in the royal court. As bankers they controlled the whole of trade and commerce, agriculture and industry. They were at the same time the business magnates in a city or town. They married within their own class, their main consideration at the time of marriage being *samānajāti* and *samānagotta*.<sup>4</sup> Their wives and daughters as female members of aristocratic families strictly observed the Purdah system, and as such

<sup>1</sup> Rhys Davids and Stede, *Pali-English Dict.*, sub voce *gahapati*.

<sup>2</sup> *Samyutta*, i, p. 71; *Niddesa*, ii (Gilla-N.), sec. 135.

<sup>3</sup> Law, *Stravasti*, p. 19.

<sup>4</sup> *Dhammapada-affakathā*, ii, p. 218.

remained concealed from public view save and except on a day of religious festival.<sup>1</sup> Besides the kings and wealthy nobles, there were others who could well afford to keep and maintain the gaṇikās or prostitutes. An idea of the cash hoardings of the rich bankers of the time might be gathered from the fact, however exaggerated, that the banker Anāthapiṇḍika of Sāvatthī easily spent fifty-four crores of gold coins for the purchase of Prince Jeta's garden, erection of a monastic establishment thereon and its formal and festive consecration.<sup>2</sup> The hoards had to be carried as cart-loads. A single piece of jewellery presented to Visākhā<sup>3</sup> by her father-in-law, the banker Migāra, cost him one hundred thousand. As dowry she received from her father, Dhanañjayasetṭhi of Sāketa and originally of Rājagaha, five hundred carts full of money, five hundred carts full of vessels of gold, etc., ghee, rice, husked and winnowed, also ploughs, ploughshares and other farm implements, and five hundred carts with three slave-women in each, along with big cattle, bulls and milch cows.<sup>4</sup>

Though by definition the Vessas formed the third grade of the Indo-Aryan society with

<sup>1</sup> *Dhammapada-attakathā*, iii, p. 100f.

<sup>2</sup> *Vinaya*, Cullavagga, vi, 4.8; *Jātaka*, i, p. 92.

<sup>3</sup> E. J. Thomas, *The Life of Buddha*, pp. 105-6.

<sup>4</sup> Malaksekera, *op. cit.*, ii, p. 901.

~~trade~~ and commerce, agriculture and farming as their distinctive occupation, in point of fact, there was hardly any social grade which did not participate in production, distribution, export and import, sale and purchase of trade commodities. So on the basis of occupation alone, the social distinction accorded to the Vessas as a class could not be maintained. Trade and farming as the occupation of the Vessas could be taken to mean that the economic aspect of social life was dominated by persons born in the Vessa families, especially the gahapatis.

In the *Apadāna*, a young banker (*setthiputta*) gives the following description of himself. Born in the family of a banker, he was endowed with the five pleasures of the senses. While inside his palatial residence, he was entertained by the dancing girls with music, vocal and instrumental, and operas. The young and childish maidens and others of the female retinue pleased and teased him with jokes and pranks. The barbers, bath-attendants, cooks, wreath-makers, jewellers, acrobats and wrestlers made him gay day and night. The poor and needy, all classes of beggars and vagrants appeared at his door along with religious mendicants of various denominations. The traders and merchants from various countries— even those from the distant kingdom of China.

(Cinaraṭṭha) and Sonnabhūmi (Suvannabhūmi) visited him. The basket-makers (~~usukārā~~), weavers (*pesakārā*), leather-workers (*camma-kārā*), carpenters (*tacchakā*), metal-workers (*kammārā*), blacksmiths, goldsmiths, tinsmiths, jewellers (*maṇikārā*), potters (*kumbhakārā*), cloth merchants (*dussikā*), bow and arrow makers (*usukārā*, *cāpakārā*), perfumers (*gandhikā*), tailors (*tunnavāyā*), dyers (*rajakārā*), oilmen (*telikā*), fuel-suppliers (*kaṭṭhahārā*), water-carriers (*udahārā*), household servants (*pessikā*), cooks (*sūpikā*), artists or clerks (*rūpadakkhā*), door-keepers (*dovārikā*), sentinels (*anīkaṭṭhā*), drain-cleaners (*sandhikā*), sweepers (*pupphacchaddakā*), elephant-riders (*hatthārohā*), and elephant-trainers (*hatthipālā*) used to visit him either for jobs and orders or for selling their wares.<sup>1</sup>

In a well-laid city or town, rooms had to be made for the residence of the various classes of Khattiyas, Brāhmaṇas, Vessas, Suddas, elephant-riders, horsemen, chariot-drivers, foot-soldiers, bowmen, sword-bearers, standard-bearers, adjutants, suppliers of food to the army, *uggas* (high-born warriors), military scouts, brave and valiant fighters, helmet-wearers and other fighting units, slaves, wage-earners, wrestlers, cooks, hotel-keepers, barbers, bath-

atendants, turners, wreath-makers, goldsmiths, silversmiths, workers in lead, tin, iron and brass, blacksmiths, jewellers, weavers, potters, leather-workers, chariot and wagon-makers, ivory-workers, rope-makers, comb-makers, spinners, basket-makers, bow, string and arrow-makers, decorators, paint-makers, dyers, washermen, tailors, money-exchangers, cloth-merchants, perfumers, grass-cutters and fodder-suppliers, fuel-suppliers, servants, sellers of leaves, fruits and roots, sellers of rice and sweetmeats, sellers of fish, meat and wine, professional actors, dancers, acrobats, magicians, ballad-reciters, corpse-burners, sweepers, *venas*, *\*nesādas*,<sup>1</sup> courtezans, dancing girls, slave girls carrying water, and traders and merchants from various countries and places.<sup>2</sup>

The hereditary craftsmen, or those who followed professional callings, such as those of architects, mechanics, carpenters, smiths, masons, ivory-workers, dyers, weavers, carriage-builders, leather-workers, potters, jewellers, fishermen, butchers, and the rest, organised themselves into various guilds (*senis*, *pūgas*), agreeing to be governed by their own laws and customs. They functioned either as producers, manufacturers, suppliers or sellers. There was

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Concepts of Buddhism*, p. 241.

<sup>2</sup> *Milinda*, p. 331.

no hard and fast line to be drawn between one and the other, for the producer or the manufacturer might himself appear to be a seller, shop or storekeeper. Those who followed a common profession, were led by a gregarious instinct to settle down or live in one and the same locality, from which circumstance the localities came to be distinguished as *vāḍḍhaki-gāma*, *kammāra-gāma*, *kumbhakāra-gāma*, and the like. By their habitual adherence to the rules of marriage and eating within their own class or group, the guilds were being hardened into castes. The social process was further complicated by the general tendency to segregate one class of workers from another within the same profession, the oil-pressers, for instance, being distinguished from the owners of oilman-stores, the elephant-trainers from the elephant-drivers, the coach-builders from the coach-drivers. Among the barbers, washermen, shampooers, etc., the degrees of their family prestige depended on their working for the royal household or for that of the courtiers, noblemen, *senāpatis*, *purohitas*, and the like. The gradation proceeded almost by insensible degrees. Although, as a rule, the *Vessas*, *Suddas*, and outcastes did not or could not aspire to marry from the *Khattiya* and *Brāhmaṇa* families, it was not always possible to prevent the intermingling of the various classes.

The traditional number of cities and towns in Jambudipa varies from sixty to eighty-four thousand, which is evidently an exaggerated figure. Sixteen were the great countries, as we noted, and six were the most prosperous and flourishing cities. The bulk of the populace lived in *gāmas* or villages. The number of inhabitants in a village might vary from thirty to one thousand families. The common occupation of the villagers was agriculture or farming. The cultivable lands around the villages were known as *gāmakhettas*. Every care was taken to protect them from dangers. Fences<sup>1</sup> (*vathī*) were erected as protection against wild animals, and snares<sup>2</sup> were laid to catch wild birds. Watchmen<sup>3</sup> were appointed to keep watch on them. Care was taken to irrigate the fields.<sup>4</sup>

The holdings might be small enough which could be managed by the members of one family with the help, in some cases, of a hired man<sup>5</sup>, or they might be big enough, extending over one thousand *karisas* (acres) or more.<sup>6</sup>

The khettas were cultivated by means of ploughs driven by oxen.<sup>7</sup> Soil was turned with

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, i, 215.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, i, 143.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, 110.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, 167; v, 412.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, i, 277.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, 293.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, 165

spades and watered by means of conduits. Seeds were sown at the usual time and crops, when ripe, were cut, threshed on a prepared mould (*khalamandala*) and then taken to the granary.

Various kinds of crops were grown on the soil. Rice was the chief article of food<sup>1</sup>, and grown abundantly. There is mention of different kinds of rice, viz., *sāli*, *vīhi*, *tāṇḍula*, etc. Of the other food crops, the chief were barley (*yava*) and millet (*kaṅgu*), grams, beans and sugarcane.<sup>2</sup> Cocoanut trees were cultivated on an extensive scale.

Besides these there were grown spices like pepper (*marica*), mustard, dry ginger, garlic, oilseeds like castor, fibre crops like cotton. These were the chief agricultural produces. Grass was collected for domestic animals.

Among the domestic animals, cattle were held in high esteem as a source of wealth. Dairy farming was in an advanced state and there was an abundant supply of milk, curd, butter and ghee. Sheep were reared for wool and other necessities.

There were jungles all over the country. Trees were cut for wood and timber. A number of people liked animal hunting in forests. There was a regular industry of catching birds like

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, i, 340

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, i, 339 : *ucchukhetiñikarantā*

parrots, peacocks, quails, partridges, mallards, etc., by means of snares that were sold in the markets.

The land was enjoyed by the cultivators by the payment of a tithe to the kings in the monarchies. Tithe was calculated as a share of the raw produce levied in kind, the amount varied from  $1/6$  to  $1/12$  portion of the produce. It was levied according to the wish of the ruler and was collected at the barn doors<sup>1</sup> or in the fields by the village syndicate, or headman (*gāmabhojaka*) or by an official (*mahāmatta*). The king could dispose of all abandoned and forest lands,<sup>2</sup> as he liked and all ownerless lands were acquired by the crown. The king could remit the tithe to any person.<sup>3</sup> In case of cultivated lands, owners could sell or dispose of them in any way they liked.

The agricultural produces and industrial goods were sold in markets, inland and foreign. The inland and foreign trades flourished side by side. The export and import of goods were carried on along land-routes and water-routes. Accordingly the merchants and traders were distinguished as *thalapathakammikā* or those who followed land-routes, and *jalapathakammikā* or those who followed water-routes.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, ii, p. 378.

<sup>2</sup> *Digha*, i, p. 87.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 169.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 121.

'As regards the inland land-routes, two were the main: Dakkhināpatha or the south-western route which extended from Rājagaha to Patit-thāna on the Godhāvari *via* Sāvatthī and Sāketa,<sup>1</sup> and Uttarāpatha or the north-western route which extended from Sāvatthī and Kosambi to Takkhasilā *via* Madhurā across the sandy desert of Rajputana. There were also local roads connected with these two great routes. The Apannaka-Jātaka speaks of the five kinds of wild (kantārā): the maru, vanṇu or nirudaka (sandy), cora (infested with robbers), vāla (infested with wild animals), amanussa (dominated by evil spirits), and appabhakkha (where food was scarce).<sup>2</sup> Thus the journey through them was perilous.<sup>3</sup> The merchants and traders who used wagons or bullock-carts were known as Satthavāhā or caravan merchants. A caravan consisted, in some instances, of five hundred wagons and its course was guided by a land-pilot (thalaniyāmaka), the direction being determined in relation to the position of stars.<sup>4</sup> The fords were crossed with the help of boats, and when the river-beds dried up, with the help of strong local bulls or bullocks.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, vv. 976-7 and 1011-13; *Buddhist India*, pp. 30f. and 103f. <sup>a</sup>

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, i, p. 99.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 107f.; *Dīgha*, i, p. 73; *Majjhima*, i, p. 276.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 107.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 194f.

The Jātakas testify to the existence of trade-relations between Benares and Ujjain,<sup>1</sup> Videha and Kasmīra-Gandhāra,<sup>2</sup> Benares and Sāvatthī,<sup>3</sup> Rājagaha and Sāvatthī,<sup>4</sup> Magadha and Sovīra.<sup>5</sup> The Satthavāhas had to carry arms as protection against highway robbers and other contingencies. The merchandise was transported by means of country boats that plied along the rivers of Jambudīpa, upwards along the Ganges as far west as Sahajāti, along the Yamunā as far as Kosambi; downwards along the Ganges as far as Campā and Tāmalitti.

Foreign trade was carried on by sea, and in some instances, partly by sea and partly by land. The Bāveru-Jātaka speaks of India's maritime intercourse with Babylonia, described as a birdless country.<sup>7</sup> The Suppāraka-Jātaka relates the voyage of a merchant ship carrying six hundred passengers for four months across the six seas, 'the destination not given.'<sup>8</sup> The Sankha-Jātaka offers us an account of the wreck of a merchant ship on its way to Suvaṇṇabhūmi, the ship being 800 cubits in length, 600

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, II, p. 248.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, III, p. 385

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, II, p. 294f

<sup>4</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, vv. 1012-3; *Buddhist India*, p. 103.

<sup>5</sup> *Yāmānavatthu-atiṭṭhakathā*, p. 336.

<sup>6</sup> *Buddhist India*, p. 103.

<sup>7</sup> *Jātaka*, No. 339.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, No. 463.

'in width and 20 fathoms in depth. In this case, the merchant was a Brāhmaṇa of Benares.<sup>1</sup> The Sīlānisamsa-Jātaka narrates the story of the wreck of another merchant ship in the midst of the ocean. In this instance, the merchant was a barber.<sup>2</sup> The Samuddavānija-Jātaka narrates the story of the arrival at an island in the sea of a thousand families of carpenters in a large ship built by them.<sup>3</sup> The Mahājanaka-Jātaka relates the story of how Mahājanaka reached Suvaṇṇabhūmi from Videha in a ship with an accommodation for seven hundred caravans with their beasts.<sup>4</sup> The ship is said to have made 700 leagues in seven days. The Valāhassa-Jātaka tells us the story of the arrival of five hundred shipwrecked merchants from Benares at the town of Sirisavatthu in Tambapanṇidīpa, the inhabitants of which were mostly daring sea-going merchants. A matriarchal system of society prevailed in this part of the country owing to the uncertainty of the return of the husbands.<sup>5</sup> As pointed out by Rhys Davids, in the Pāli Nikāyas, mention is made of sea-voyages out of sight of land and of long voyages

<sup>1</sup> Jātaka, No. 442.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., No. 190.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., No. 466.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., No. 539.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid., ii, p. 127f. For details of India's sea-borne trade, see R. K. Mookerjee, *History of Indian Shipping and Maritime Activity from the earliest times* (1912).

lasting even for six months.<sup>1</sup> The course of the ships was steered by the Niyyāmaka or water-pilot<sup>2</sup>, the direction of land being sometimes ascertained by the flight of crows (*disākākā*).<sup>3</sup> Rhys Davids further observes 'Later texts, of about the third century B.C. speak of voyages down the Ganges from Benares to the mouth of the river and thence across the Indian Ocean to the opposite coast of Burma, and even from Bharukaccha (the modern Broach) round Cape Comorin to the same destination'.<sup>4</sup>

The *Mahāniddesa*<sup>5</sup> speaks of India's commerce by sea with Yona and Paṇamayona. If the first place be located in the Punjab, the second place must be located either in Western Asia or identified with some Greek island in the Mediterranean, if not with Ionia proper. Towards the east, it mentions Kālamukha, Suvaṇṇabhūmi, Vesunga, Verāpatha, Takkola, Talmali, Tambapaṇṇī and Java as countries visited by the Indian sea-going merchants and speaks also of the manner in which they followed the difficult land-routes after reaching the harbour. Of the places mentioned,

<sup>1</sup> *Digha*, i, p 222, *Samyutta*, v, p. 51.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 138

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, p. 267

<sup>4</sup> *Buddhist India*, p 96.

<sup>5</sup> *Mahāniddesa* pp. 154-155, 415.

'Kālamukha may be identified with the Arakan coast and Suvaṇṇabhūmi may be located in Lower Burma.<sup>1</sup> The next four places may be shown to correspond to Ptolemy's Chryse Chora, Besyngbeitai, Berbai and Takkola. Tamali is identified by Sylvain Levi with Tāmralinga in Malay Peninsula. Tambapanni and Java are no other than Ceylon and the island of Java. The *Apadāna*<sup>2</sup> expressly mentions the visit of merchants from Malaya (Malay Peninsula) and the distant land of Cina (China).

It is difficult to say what the sea merchants traded upon and the nature of the articles of export and import. The *Suppāraka-Jātaka*<sup>3</sup> shows that they made their fortune by collecting gems, corals, etc., from the seas. They appear to have traded also in muslins, the finer sorts of cloth, cutlery and armour, brocades, embroideries, perfumes, drugs, ivory works, jewellery and gold.<sup>4</sup>

Within the country, produce was brought to markets for sale. Benares was one of the most important commercial centres. The other big cities also commanded a considerable amount of trade and exchange. Foodstuffs for the towns

<sup>1</sup> R. C. Majumdar, *Suvarṇadvīpa*, p. 56f.; Lévi, *Études Asiatiques*, Vol. II, Ch. II.

<sup>2</sup> *Apadāna*, i, p. 2.

<sup>3</sup> No. 463.

<sup>4</sup> *Buddhist India*, p. 98.

were brought to the gates, apparently from villages, and the sale transactions were carried on there.<sup>1</sup> There were *āpanas* or shops where commodities were displayed for sale<sup>2</sup>, while there were *antarāpanas* where things were stored before sale.<sup>3</sup> Merchants could enter into partnership or temporary partnership and there could arise disputes as to the shares of profit.<sup>4</sup> The commodities sold in these *āpanas* were textile fabrics, groceries and oil, green groceries<sup>5</sup>, grain<sup>6</sup>, perfumes and flowers<sup>7</sup>, articles of gold and jewellery, carriages, arrows, etc. The hawkers carried their wares<sup>8</sup> for sale in portable trays. For the sale of strong drinks there were taverns known as *pānāgāras*.<sup>9</sup> Prices were not fixed and there was competition by which the dealers wanted to prevail upon the purchasers. The vice of adulteration was also not unknown. On the part of the buyers there was the haggling of price.<sup>10</sup> Things for the royal households were purchased by an officer known as Aggahakāraka who fixed the prices of the required commodities. The prices so fixed could not, however, be changed by appeal. There was also a check on the officer

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 445.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 267.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*, i, pp. 55, 350.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 404.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 411.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 267.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 290f.; iv, p. 82.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, p. 21.

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 251f.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 111f.

from the side of the king. All native and foreign goods imported into the city were assessed and a duty was levied upon them.

Coin<sup>s</sup> appear to have been the chief medium of exchange, but the more primitive means of barter was also not unknown. Barter was not, however, the usual practice. In the Jātakas almost all kinds of prices, fees, pensions, fines, loans, and incomes have usually been stated in terms of coins of different denominations. Among coins there is mention of *kākanika*, *māsaka*, *addhamāsaka*, *pāda*, *addhapāda*, *kahāpana* and *addhakahāpana*.<sup>1</sup> Silver coins do not appear to have been in use and mention of gold coins like *rikkha*<sup>2</sup> or *suvarṇa* is late and doubtful. There is mention also of cowry shells (*sippikāni*), but they were probably not used as currency, and the coins mentioned above were probably all made of copper.<sup>3</sup>

Besides actual currency there were several other legal instruments. Mention is made of letters of credit by means of which big merchants

<sup>1</sup> *Buddhistic Studies*, ed. by B. C. Law, Chap. XV; T. W. Rhys Davids, *Ancient Coins and Measures of Ceylon*; D. R. Bhandarkar, *Carmichael Lectures*, 1921, pp. 53, 62, etc.

<sup>2</sup> Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, 259. It is also called *nikkha*; D. R. Bhandarkar, *Carmichael Lectures*, 1921, pp. 53, 62, 63, 64, etc.; Pran Nath, *A Study in the Economic Condition of Ancient India*, p. 85f.

<sup>3</sup> For details, see Mrs. Rhys Davids, *Economic Conditions according to Early Buddhist Literature*, *Cambridge History of India*, I., Chap. VIII.

in large cities used to get money from fellow merchants. There is also mention of promissory notes.

There were no banks, and banking facilities were few. Loans could be taken. Money-lending was looked upon as an honest calling but this had already given rise to profit-mongering. Money was lent against bonds (*pannā*) and there were instances of bad debts which were never repaid. But money-lending was done by professional money-lenders while ordinary people used to hoard up their wealth in piles and conceal them underground or deposited with friends. The nature and amount of such hoarded wealth were recorded on gold or copper plates.<sup>1</sup>

In the *Anguttara Nikāya* we have mention of *Satta-vanijjā* or trade in living beings.<sup>2</sup> Buddhaghosa<sup>3</sup> explains the word as meaning *manussa-vikkaya* or traffic in human beings. This traffic might be taken to imply, among other things, traffic in women and slave trade. Prostitution as a social institution was in existence in India from the earliest times, and it had originated, as suggested by some scholars,

<sup>1</sup> *Buddhist India*, p. 101f.

<sup>2</sup> *Anguttara Nikāya*, iii, p. 208.

<sup>3</sup> A celebrated Buddhist commentator who flourished in the 5th century A.D. Wrote many important Pali commentaries—Law, *The Life and Work of Buddhaghosa* (1923).

'from abandoned harems of kings, nobles, bankers and others.<sup>1</sup> The Pali literature clearly attests that some of the leading ganikās or courtesans of the time made a profitable trade of prostitution by maintaining a regular brothel containing five hundred prostitutes.<sup>2</sup>

In the early Buddhist texts, mention is made of four kinds of slaves: *antojātā*,<sup>3</sup> *dhanakkītā*, *karamarānītā*, and *samarindāsabyamupagatā*, i.e., those who were born of slave parents or begotten on slave women, those purchased with money, those who were reduced to slavery under coercion by bandits, and those who took to slavery of their own accord. The Jātakas contain instances where the slaves were bought for seven hundred *kahāpanas*.<sup>4</sup>

Scholars agree that there was nothing like what afterwards came to be the rigorous caste system in India at the time of the rise of Jainism and Buddhism. But this may not wholly be the correct reading of the fact. The evidence of the later Vedic texts is conclusive that even after death, the custom was to erect sepulchres or tombs of different heights to maintain the distinction between the dead

<sup>1</sup> Barua, *Introduction to History of Indian Prostitution* by Sinha and Basu.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iii, pp. 60f. and 485f.; Law, *Women in Buddhist Literature*, p. 32f.

<sup>3</sup> *Sumanagālavilāsini*, i, p. 300; *Jātaka*, No. 545.

<sup>4</sup> *Jātaka*, iii, p. 343.

belonging to the four divisions of the people. Though some of the Rgvedic hymns presuppose the prevalence of the custom of the burial, burial was subsequently replaced by cremation, although the cremation was followed by the consecration of the bones, arranged limb by limb in mounds. The Vedic texts speak of two kinds of *citā*; *agnidagdhā*, where the corpses were burnt and *anagnidagdhā* where they were not burnt. This was precisely the custom in some parts of India in Buddha's time. Accordingly the early Pali texts refer to two different grounds for the disposal of the dead: *ālāhana* (*Ardhamāgadhi*, *Ādāhana*), where the dead bodies were cremated and *sivathikā* or *āmakasusāna* where the corpses were simply thrown away to undergo the natural process of decomposition or to be devoured by carnivorous beasts, birds, insects, etc. In cases of larger grounds they were placed in charge of *susānagopakas*<sup>1</sup> who were *Caṇḍālas*. The texts also refer to an aboriginal custom of burying the dead and washing the bones (*atthidopana*)<sup>2</sup> with drunkenness and revelry which was prevalent in southern India.

<sup>1</sup> *Dhammapada Commentary*, 1, p. 69.

<sup>2</sup> *Anguttara*, v, p. 216; *Sumanigalavilāsini*, i, p. 84. *Vide B. C. Law, 'Social, Economical and Religious Conditions of Ancient India according to the Buddhist Texts'—Pathak Commemoration Volume*, pp. 68–79.

## CHAPTER IV

### RELIGION

The social and economic life of a country considered apart from religion, constitutes a sphere of collective existence in which human activities are directed to the twofold pursuit of *kāma* and *attha*, i.e., of worldly pleasure and advantage. Religion, on the other hand, constitutes a sphere of collective or individual existence in which human activities are directed to the twofold pursuit of *dhamma*<sup>1</sup> and *mokkha*, i.e., of perfection of conduct and perfection of personality. By its definition, religion is essentially a system of faith and worship implying as it does human recognition of a personal God entitled to obedience and its effect on conduct, etc. As pursuit of *dhamma*, religion seeks to mould and remould, adjust and readjust human life, individual and collective, as expressed in various ways in conduct. It either sublimates the grosser elements in human nature or sanctifies all that is normally considered right, proper, good, noble, pure, refined, beautiful, appreciable and enjoyable. As pursuit of *mokkha*, it implies self-alienation

---

<sup>1</sup> E. J. Thomas, *History of Buddhist Thought*, p. 78.

from all things and all interests that connect us with the world. It seeks to bring the individual to a state of self-realisation and self-perfection. Here we are to consider religion only in that aspect in which it may be treated as a potent factor of human life and civilisation.

The early texts of Jainism and Buddhism reveal to us a wonderful and highly interesting picture of Jambudvîpa in which the habitual religion of the masses of people was in its varying degrees and forms in conflict and compromise with the higher religions preached by various new schools of thought and new orders of *religieux*. The masses of people following their habitual religion were broadly distinguished as Devadhammikas or Devavatikas from others who professed to have belonged to distinct orders of hermits and ascetics, among whom discipleship played a prominent part.<sup>1</sup> As Devadhammikas or Devavatikas, the masses of people are said to have been divided into diverse groups of worshippers. The Devadharma was in its essence some form of a religion of Bhakti, and as such its expression was emotional and its form ritualistic or ceremonial. The taking and keeping of vows in propitiation

<sup>1</sup> *Culla Niddesa*, p. 173f.; Barua in *I.H.Q.*, iii, 1927, p. 251; *Banhatt*, iii, p. 69.

or honour of the worshipped was its prominent external feature. The connection between the worshipper and the worshipped lay through worship which always implied an act of offering in fulfilment of the vow or promise. The object of worship was the attainment of a desired end. This popular religion of worship was based upon the give-and-take principle. It was through prayer that the worshipper sought to have a communion or communication with the worshipped. The mediation by a holy person was considered necessary. So the office of a competent priest was always in requisition. From the side of the worshipper no amount of offering was considered sufficient and no amount of praise adequate to bring out the divine attributes of the worshipped, who was in each case a deva or devatā, a personal god or goddess, malevolent or benevolent. Thus in Devadhamma representing the popular religion of India a belief in the presence of a divine personality was the *conditio sine qua non*. This personality was either a god or a deity. It was marked throughout by a process of personification of the divine attributes or deification of the worshipped. The distinctive nomenclature for the different groups of worshippers was sought to be determined by the grammatical rule *yā yesam devatā*, the worshippers are to be distinguished by the name of, the deity they

worship.<sup>1</sup> Accordingly the devatā or deity was defined by the aphorism: *ye yesam dakkhinneyyā te tesam devatā*.<sup>2</sup> ‘They are the deities to them to whom they are worthy of homage.’

In the *Culla Niddesa* and other Pali canonical texts, the devas are broadly divided into three classes: *sammutidevā*, i.e., gods by common acceptance, *upapattidevā*, i.e., gods by origination and *visuddhīdevā*, i.e., gods by purity. In the first class are placed the kings, princes and the queens and princesses; in the second class, the various deities worshipped by the people; and in the third, the founders of religions, their great disciples and other saintly personages. The books also testify to the prevalence of a general tendency towards finding out the highest personality among the devas (atideva), among the sages (muni-muni) and among the leaders (*gāṇa-gāṇi*). In the *Devadhamma-Jātaka*,<sup>3</sup> the gods of popular worship are typified by the sun and the moon. There is a longer list given in the *Culla Niddesa* which includes aggi or firegod, nāga or serpent, suvanṇa (suparna), i.e., garuda, yakkha, asura, gandhabba, mahārāja, canda, suriya, Inda, Brahmā, minor gods and quarter-gods (disā). The list also includes such deified

<sup>1</sup> The rule is implied in *Culla Niddesa*, p. 174. This is the same as Pāṇini's rule *sāsya devatā*.

<sup>2</sup> *Culla Niddesa*, p. 174.

<sup>3</sup> No. 6.

'heroes as Vāsudeva, Baladeva, Puṇṇabhadda and Maṇibhadda. In it are included also the representatives of such religious orders as those of Ājīvikas, Nigaṇṭhas, Jatilas, Paribbājakas<sup>1</sup> and Aviruddhakas. The list also mentions elephants, horses, cows, dogs and crows among the objects of worship.<sup>2</sup> The list given is not exhaustive. There are passages in which the upapattidevas are located in three spheres of the universe, those dwelling on the earth being called bhūmmā or terrestrial, those in the firmament as antarikkhacarā, and those in the highest region (ākāsatṭhā). At the time of the rise of Jainism and Buddhism it is inconceivable that the masses of people paid their homage to a particular deity of this class to the exclusion of the rest. On the other hand, the evidence tends to prove that all of them were included in a growing pantheon. And yet it is not incorrect to suppose that the masses were divided into several groups, each with its own supreme hero or object of worship, e.g., the Vāsudevavatikas formed a group which had Vāsudeva as its hero, and so as to the rest. That these popular groups represented different classes of devotees is evident from Pāṇini's rule appertaining to Bhakti. As illustrations, Pāṇini mentions the worshippers of Vāsudeva, Arjuna, Desa and

---

<sup>1</sup> Law, *Historical Gleanings*, Chap. II.

<sup>2</sup> Culla Niddesa, p. 173f.

Janapada.<sup>1</sup> The process of amalgamation must have taken place gradually with the inclusion of all the deities in a common pantheon. In doing so a classification of them was necessary and the result was a hierarchy in different forms.

The hierarchy as developed in early Buddhism placed the four grades of arūpabrahmas as the highest in the scale, below them the sixteen grades of rūpabrahmas, below their ranks the six classes of kāmāvacaradevas, the lowest of them being represented by the four mahārajas or lokapālas exercising their suzerainty over the rest of the gods, and the demigods, whether ākāsatṭhas, antarikkhacaras or bhummis. Below the kāmāvacara gods are placed ordinary men, below them the animal world, below it the spirit world and below it the different purgatories. Even above the arūpabrahmas are placed the saintly Buddhist personalities called Ariyas (elect) forming eight grades of spirituality and above all stands the incomparable Buddha.

The hierarchy as conceived in early Jainism seems to place the Vemānikadevas as the highest in the scale, then the Jyotiśis, the Vāṇamantaras and Bhavanavāsis. The Vemānika gods and angels are represented by *Sohamma Isāna*, *Sanankumāra*, *Māhinda Bambbhā* (Brahmā), *Lantaga*, *Mahāsukka*, *Sahassārā*, *Acchutapadī*

<sup>1</sup> *Pāṇini*, IV, 3.95–100.

and the rest. Māhinda's heaven is the heaven of the thirty-three gods together with the lokapālas. In the Jyotiṣī class are placed the sun, the moon, the planets, comets and stars including Rāhu. The Vāṇamana tradevas comprise the bhūtas, pisācas, yakkhas, rākshasas, kinnaras, kiṃpurisas, gandhabbas, etc. The asuras, nāgas, supaṇṇas, vijju (lightning), fire, continent (dīva), ocean (udahi), disākumāras (quarter-gods), pavaṇa (wind-gods) and thunder-gods (thanīya) represent the Bhavanavāsis. Below them are the earth-lives, water-lives, fire-lives, and wind-lives. Above all of them stands the incomparable Jina with his advanced disciples.<sup>1</sup> A similar hierarchy was developed by the Ājivikas in their cosmography.<sup>2</sup>

As thoroughly discussed by Rhys Davids,<sup>3</sup> the two most important Pali suttas that contain the list of popular gods and deities are the Mahāsamaya and the Mahā-ātānātiya. The real interest of these two suttas lies in the fact that they offer us the names of hosts of popular gods and goddesses affiliated to the realm of the four lokapālas: Dhatarattha of the eastern quarter, Virūlhaka of the southern quarter, Virupakkha of the western quarter, and Vessavaṇa Kuvera of the northern quarter. Evidently they were the guardians or presiding

<sup>1</sup> *Aupapāṭika Sūtra*, secs. 32-37.

<sup>2</sup> *Dīgha*, i, p. 54.

<sup>3</sup> *Buddhist India*, Chap. 12.

deities of the four continents. Religious fancy led the people to locate the heaven of the thirty-three gods on the top of the Mount Sumeru and the world of the asuras at the bottom of it, below the water, and to conceive a protracted war between the thirty-three gods and the asuras for the possession of Inda's or Sakka's domain. The formation of the hierarchy in ancient Indian pantheon must have resulted from a long course of development of religious ideas and beliefs and of conflict and compromise between them.

As for the higher religions, mention is frequently made of the contemporary representatives of the ancient Vedic sages generally enumerated as ten in number. They formed the sotthiya or mahāsāla class of Brahmins from among whom the Purohitas or house-priests of the kings and wealthy nobles, etc., were chosen and appointed. We have mention also of the teachers of the early upanishadic schools such as the Addhariyas (Aitareyas ?), Tittiriyas (Taittiriyas), Chandokas (Chāndogyas), Chandāvas (Śātapathas ?) and Bavharijjas (Bāhvṛcas).<sup>1</sup>

In addition to them, the Books speak of the Tāpasas, Paribbājakas and Samanas of different orders. Among the Tāpasas some are honoured as *isis* or sages. The Paribbājakas, mostly

<sup>1</sup> *Dīgha*, 1, p. 237.

Brahmins by birth, are broadly distinguished as Ekadandikas and Tedandikas. The Samanas were typified by the followers of the six teachers known to the Buddhists as six titthiyas. But to this class belonged also the Sakyaputtiyas or followers of Buddha Gautama.

In the opinion of Hopkins<sup>1</sup>, Vedic religion or Brahmanism was confined to a small section of the people of India. It was rather an island in the sea, the majority of the people following their own religions which consisted in beliefs in spells, incantations, charms and spirits. This acute observation of Hopkins is true only in so far as it appears that the Brahmins as a class including even those who were householders and followed different callings, belonged to a distinct religious order. According to the Brahmanic doctrine, the fulfilment of the religious ideal was to proceed by stages, three or four, called brahma-carya, gārhasthya and vānaprastha, the third culminating in the life of the Parivrājaka, Yati, Bhikṣu or Sannyasin. This is well borne out by the Buddha's description of the five types of Brahmins in the *Anguttara Nikāya*. But if Brahmanism was based upon the Vedas as it professed to be, in no stage of its history, it was free from the belief in the efficacy of spells, incantations, charms and the like. As a matter

of fact, Brahmanism was the only form of higher religion in India which could affiliate all the popular cults without any feeling of contradiction. The religious beliefs and practices grew up among different tribes, races and nations and were cherished by them with veneration and joy. It was left to the founders and exponents of the higher religions to decide how far, and in which manner these were to be utilised, modified, improved or replaced. But we shall see anon, in spite of the apparent victory and predominance of the higher religions over the folk, the latter always held the ground and the sum total of results of the age-long conflict was nothing but a widening of its scope and enrichment of its contents. The folk religion afforded indeed the living ground of synthesis of contending faiths. And with the march of time when it became sufficiently strong and self-conscious, it asserted itself as a great religion of Bhakti influencing the whole domain of the higher faiths, Jain, Buddhist, and all.

We have in the Pali canonical texts a faithful account of the Vedic religion as practised by the Sotthiyas and Mahāsālas of the age. On its emotional side, it consisted in the invocation of Inda, Soma, Varuṇa, Isāna, Pajāpati, Brahmā, Mahiddhi and Yama. The invocation was practised either by way of supplication (*āyacanahetu*), or by way of prayer (*pathanahetu*), or by,

that of eulogy (*abhinandanahetu*).<sup>1</sup> The invocation of Siri, the Goddess of Luck, mentioned in the Brahmajāla and other suttas is also typically Vedic.<sup>2</sup> The Jātaka description of the four Indian Graces, viz., Āsā (Hope), Saddhā (Faith), Siri (Luck) and Hiri (Modesty) as four daughters of Sakka, the king of the gods, is originally Vedic. From the Rgveda to the Jātaka, the trend of the change was from abstract conceptions of the four fundamental female attributes or virtues to their personifications.<sup>3</sup> In the *Lalitavistara* and the *Mahāvastu* versions of the Ātānātiya Sutta, the four varieties of the Goddess of Luck are associated with Virūdhaka, the regent of the southern quarter, and they bear the appellations of Śrīmatī or Śriyāmatī, Yaśamati, Yaśahprāptā or Lakshmīmatī, and Yaśodharā. The name of the Goddess as recorded in the Barhut label seems to correspond to Śrīmatī. The Barhut representation of Sirimā has, as shown by Rhys Davids, a faithful correspondence in her images as found in the temples of South India. The Siri-Kālakanni Jātaka (No. 383) introduces us to a Siridevī or Lakkhi, who is described as the daughter of Dhatarattha, regent of the eastern quarter. In this Jātaka, Siri or Luck is compared and contrasted with Kālakarnī or Misfortune, the

<sup>1</sup> *Digha*, i, p. 244f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 11.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 392f.

latter being described as the daughter of Virūpakkha, regent of the western quarter.<sup>1</sup> Thus religion sought through its mythology to create various types of Graces and to present them through poetry and art for the improvement of female types in society. Maṇimekhalā, the female angel of the sea, saving the sailing ships from wrecks, was a new but beautiful creation of the later age. She belonged to the realm of the four Mahārājas.<sup>2</sup>

On the sacrificial side, the same religion is said to have consisted in various forms of sacrifice involving the slaughter of cows, bulls, buffaloes, elephants, horses, goats, rams, etc.<sup>3</sup> The *Āśvamedha* (horse sacrifice) and *Vājapeya*, (soma sacrifice), associated with secular Brahmanism, were two forms of sacrifice having a political significance.<sup>4</sup> The Purisamedha (human sacrifice) is also associated with the Vedic religion.<sup>5</sup> These sacrifices are said to have been insisted on by the Purohitas and the Mahāsāla class of Brahmins. These were attended with big feasts, offering of gifts and distribution of charities. The performance of great sacrifices

<sup>1</sup> Barua, *Barhui*, Bk. II, p. 73.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 17; vi, p. 35; S. K. Aiyangar, *The Buddhism of Maṇimekhalai*. (*Buddhistic Studies*) p. 1f.

<sup>3</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, Brāhmaṇadhammika Sutta; *Dīgha*, i, Kūṭadanta Sutta.

<sup>4</sup> *Śaṇḍiyutta*, i, p. 76; *Āṅguttara*, ii, p. 42; *Sutta-nipāta*, v, 303.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*

by the Vedic ascetics in the three regions of Gayākhetta was a notable annual function eagerly awaited by all the inhabitants of Āṅga and Magadha.<sup>1</sup> Similar sacrifices were performed in other parts of the country where the Brahmins of these classes lived or had influence.

On the ritualistic side, the Vedic religion or secular Brahmanism consisted, as we are told, in *Aggihutta* or oblations to fire, and diverse other kinds of *homa*.

The Buddhist and Jaina texts do not at all exaggerate the state of things when they inform us that secular Brahmanism consisted in spells, charms, incantations, exorcism, witchcraft, occultism, interpretation of dreams, signs, and cries of beasts and birds as foreshadowing coming events, soothsayings, etc. They correctly refer to the Atharva Veda as the scriptural source of the Brahmins from which followed the development and intermingling of popular occultism and science. It was indeed "through the Atharvanic process that an alliance between secular Brahmanism and all primitive cults was possible, an alliance or blending from which even Hinduism of the 20th century is not free. Anyhow, as the books bear ample evidence, the Purohita and Yājaka classes of Brahmins fully utilised it in guiding the course of daily life of the

<sup>1</sup> Barus, *Gayā and Buddhaqayā*, p. 110.

people. They were exactly the class to whom the kings, courtiers, and the rest turned for consultation and ministration when they were frightened by some unnatural dreams or occurrence of abnormal events, celestial or terrestrial, or by apparitions.<sup>1</sup> Curiously enough, the leaders of such highly protestant religions as Buddhism and Jainism could not help satisfying this insistent popular demand. The Buddha is represented as a better interpreter of dreams than the Brahmins, when he was consulted by king Pasenadi at the instance of his queen.<sup>2</sup> The improvisation of *Parittas* as saving chants in early Buddhism was undoubtedly due to the dire necessity of meeting the same popular demand.

The people of India in their worldly existence had certain fears which are enumerated in the Pali canonical texts as sixteen,<sup>3</sup> and in the *Milinda*<sup>4</sup> as seventeen, such fears as might arise from the tyranny of the ruler, from the action of thieves, robbers, etc., from the action of men, malevolent spirits, stars, water, air, fire, famine, disease, pestilence, reptiles and wild beasts, etc. They were naturally inclined to avail themselves of all possible means to avoid

<sup>1</sup> *Dīgha*, I, p. 9f.

<sup>2</sup> *Jātaka*, I, p. 234f

<sup>3</sup> *Anguttara*, II, p. 121f

<sup>4</sup> *Milinda*, p. 196

or overcome them. No religion was acceptable to them if it could not assure them of the potency of its means to overcome their fears and to inspire confidence in order to obtain a fearless state. Secular Brahmanism employed all its means to prove its usefulness to them. When other contending faiths entered the field and endeavoured to win the people over to their side, they were required to fulfil the same task by such means as they could devise. The Buddhists adopted the solemn chanting of the *Parittas* as one of the means. The essence of the *Parittas* was *saccakiriyā*, or the effective expression of the wish by an open declaration of the truth. Through the *Parittas* they tried to get rid of the objectionable features of the Brahmanic rituals. The æsthetic aspect was improved and the matter was simplified. But in so doing they failed to anticipate how the parasite with its root stuck to the main tree would grow disproportionately in course of time.

The people were believers in the efficacy of pronouncement of benediction by the priests and other holy persons, in amulets, and the like. In order to oust the Brahmin vested interests from the field, the Jains and Buddhists had to introduce certain *mangalas*, claimed as more efficacious. With the Jains the eight *mangalas* were the eight auspicious symbols or emblems: Sovatthiya (Svastika), Sirivacca (Śrivatsa),

Nandiyāvatta (Nandyāvarta), Vaddhamāṇaga (Vārdhamāna), Bhaddāsana (Bhadrāsana), Kalasa, Maccha (Matsya), and Dappana (Darpana).<sup>1</sup> Other enumerations of mangalas are also met with in the Jaina texts.<sup>2</sup> The Buddhists introduced chanting of the *Mangala Sutta*, laying much stress on the thirty-seven points of mangala or moral condition of human welfare.<sup>3</sup>

In seeking to draw a sharp distinction between the Brahmin as he was and the Brahmin as he ought to have been, the Jains and Buddhists served only to bring the Brahmanic religious ideal into bold relief with the result that Māhāna (= Brāhmaṇa) became one of the distinctive epithets of Mahāvīra, and the Buddhist arahants came to be praised as Brāhmaṇas *par excellence*.

By *mangalas* the people of India understood the sight of certain auspicious objects, all-white chariots, etc., the hearing of certain auspicious sounds, and the touch of certain auspicious things.<sup>4</sup> They also understood by them the performance of certain auspicious rites for the birth of a male child or for the marriage of boys

<sup>1</sup> *Aupapāṭīka Sūtra*, sec. 49.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, secs. 53, 55.

<sup>3</sup> Mangala Sutta in the *Khuddakapāṭha* (pp. 2-3); and *Sutta-nipāta* (pp. 46-47). Cf. also Mahāmāngala Jātaka (No. 453).

<sup>4</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 72f.

and girls and for making the journey to a distant place successful.<sup>1</sup> Secular Brahmanism provided the people with appropriate rituals for all domestic rites of the Indo-Aryan householders. To bring and keep them within their fold, the Jains and Buddhists were required to suggest better substitutes. But in point of fact, they did the work so imperfectly that even their own lay supporters had to be left to adhere to the Brahmanic scheme of social life and to their own family, tribal, national and local customs, with minor modifications here and there.

The Brahmins as Lakkhaṇa-pāthakas suggested certain prominent bodily characteristics of a Mahāpurisa or Great Man. As the early Jain and Buddhist texts go to prove that the Jainas and Buddhists simply utilised them in establishing that the founder of their own order was the greatest of men.<sup>2</sup>

Secular Brahmanism allowed the Brahmins to marry from all social grades, and they did, as a matter of fact, marry girls from all sections of the people. The Jains and Buddhists who were otherwise strongly opposed to the caste system, stood as great champions for the purity

<sup>1</sup> Asoka's Rock Edict, ix; D. R. Bhandarkar, *Asoka*, p. 322f.; R. K. Mookerjee, *Asoka*, p. 153ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Aupapātika Sūtra*, sec. 16; *Dīgha*, iii, Lakkhaṇa-Suttanta, p. 142f.

of blood and family prestige. They praised those Brahmins who married girls from their own class only, and in doing so they became *ipso facto* contributors to the social orthodoxy. The cow sacrifice was freely allowed in secular Brahmanism. The eating of beef was not as yet forbidden in society, even among the Brahmins and hermits. The Buddha raised his strong voice against cow-killing, and for the matter of that, against beef-eating.<sup>1</sup> Thus unintentionally he contributed to the social orthodoxy in so far as it expressed itself in the form of prohibition of certain articles of food.

The Brahmins as a class of priests with vested interests were in favour of the monarchical form of government, and the Brahmanic influence was much stronger in monarchies than in oligarchies. In theory, the Jains and Buddhists were in deep sympathy with the democratic constitution. The Jaina religious Order which was evidently constituted with Mahāvīra as the *gani* or leader and nine among his prominent disciples as *ganadharas*<sup>2</sup> or sectional leaders, was modelled on the republican constitution of the nine Licchavi or Mallaki clans, and the Buddhist religious Order, too, with its stronger internal cohesion and marked regimental discipline, may be shown to have been

<sup>1</sup> *Sutta-nipāta*, p. 50f., Brāhmaṇapadhammaka Sutta.

<sup>2</sup> Mrs. S. Stevenson, *The Heart of Jainism*, p. 61.

based upon the principle of unity and concerted action which characterised the life and constitution of a Khattiya tribe forming an oligarchy. The difference between the two organisations lay in the fact that the Jaina Order was based upon the idea of confederacy, while the Buddhist Order professed the regimental unity of a single ruling clan. But the popular predilections for kingship and overlordship were not without their influence on the Jain and Buddhist minds, particularly on the latter. The Pali canonical texts reveal throughout a growing tendency to establish parallelism between the position of a righteous king as an earthly overlord and that of the Buddha as the supreme founder of the Kingdom of Righteousness<sup>1</sup> as well as between the attributes and functions of the two. Even with regard to the disposal of the body of the Buddha after his demise, the direction was to adopt the method which applied to the funeral of a king-overlord. The ultimate result of adaptation to the monarchical tradition was that within a purely democratic constitution of the Buddhist Sangha, the Master came to be enthroned as the supreme Lord of Righteousness with Sāriputta and Moggallāna as his two *Dhammasenāpatis* and an inner circle of eighty great disciples (*asiti-mahāsāvakā*).

---

<sup>1</sup> Note that in the *Aśvapāṇika Sūtra*, sec. 16, Mahāvīra is praised as *Dharma vara-cāduranta-oakkavati*.

Secular Brahmanism recommended the daily practice of salutation to six quarters by a good householder at dawn after bath. The practice was thus linked up with a symbolical scheme of the duties and obligations of a householder which the Buddha tried to render significant by an orientation from his own point of view.<sup>1</sup> But the total result was nothing but the prominence of the ideal which was implied in the Brahmanical scheme.

The early Jain and Buddhist texts also present a vivid and fairly detailed picture of the life of the *tāpasas* or ancient order of hermits. According to the Brahmanical scheme, the hermits represented the Vānaprastha (Vanapatha) stage of life. Their retirement from the world is known in Pali as *isipabbajjā*. The persons who adopted this mode of religious life were mostly Brahmins and Khatiyas; a few of them were *gahapatis*. Only in a solitary instance a *mātanga*,<sup>2</sup> or 'candāla' figures as a notable personality among them. The tradition is conspicuous by the absence of the Suddas. The hermits on their retirement from the world selected a beautiful spot in a woodland or a sequestered valley having a river, or a stream, or a natural lake, near by, and built a hermitage which was no better than a leaf-hut or bamboo

<sup>1</sup> *Dīgha*, iii, p. 180f., Śingalovāda Sutta.

<sup>2</sup> *Mātanga Jataka*, *Jātaka* No. 497.

cottage in sylvan surroundings. Either they retired alone or with their families and in some instances with their resident pupils. They lived on roots and fruits, wild-grown rice and vegetables. Their garments were made of birch-bark or antelope-skin. The matted hair on their head marked them out to the people at large as Jātilas. Long before the rise of Jainism and Buddhism the hermits in large numbers built their hermitages in the Himalayan forests, in the Vindhya Range and along the banks of the Ganges, Yamunā and other sacred rivers. The hermitages were fenced round, and inside, some of them reared mango and other fruit trees, while the lakes or pools near by were adorned with varieties of lotus flowers; some of them were so ideally situated and so attractive that they were said to have been built by Vessakamma, the heavenly architect.<sup>1</sup> The instances are not wanting in which the royal princes in exile betook themselves with their wives to forest-life, leading the life of hermits. When and how the institutions commenced we cannot definitely say. But it seems to have had a very early beginning indeed. The Jātakas and Jain texts<sup>2</sup> maintain a tradition of some ancient

---

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Vessantara Jātaka (No. 547); Mugapakkha Jātaka—Temiya Jātaka (No. 538).

<sup>2</sup> Uttarādhyayana Sūtra, Leo. XVIII, Kumbhakāra Jātaka (No. 408).

illustrious contemporary kings of India, all of whom adopted the life of a hermit, viz., Naggaji of Gandhāra, Dummukha of Pañcāla, Nimi of Videha, Bhīma of Vidabbha, and Karakaṇḍu of Kalinga. The Uttarādhyayana Sūtra<sup>1</sup> mentions a few other ancient kings who had reached perfection as hermits, viz., Bharata of Bhārata-varṣa,<sup>2</sup> Sagara of Ayodhyā, Maghavan of Śrāvasti, Sanatkumāra and Mahābala of Hastināpura, Śānti, Kuntthu (Kakustha ?) who came to be revered as Tīrthaṅkaras, Hariṣeṇa of Kāmpilya, Jaya of Rājagṛha, Daśārnabhadra of Daśārnā, Rudrāyana of Sauvīra, and Vijaya of Dvāravatī. Thus it may be shown that the tradition of hermit-life was not restricted to any particular country or kingdom. It was widely recognised as a well-ordered institution all over the Aryandom from Gandhāra to Videha and Kalinga and from Kuru-Pañcāla to Vidarbha.

In the history of the Indian *tāpasas*, the kingdom of Videha is entitled to much importance. Both the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa and the Makhādeva Sutta<sup>2</sup> refer to king Māthava, Makhādeva, Maghādeva or Mahādeva, founder of the royal dynasty of Videha, as the first gifted monarch, who was upset at the sight of a grey hair plucked from his head, and taking it to be the sign of death and retirement, he left

---

<sup>1</sup> Lec. XVIII.

<sup>2</sup> *Majjhuma Nikāya*, ii, p. 74f.

the world forthwith leaving the throne to his son, Nimi, who along with the long line of successors, the Janakas of Mithilā, followed in the footsteps of his great father. The Brahmadattas of Kāsi appeared to have vied with the kings of Videha in this matter.

If the fall of an apple was important to Newton who reflecting on it, discovered the Law of Gravitation, the appearance of a grey hair on the head or the fall of a withered leaf from a tree was no less important, as the Jātakas<sup>1</sup> tell us, to the Indian hermits who reflecting thereon, found out the inner world of spirituality, immortality and tranquillity.

The retirement of several kings of the same line from the world and the distinction obtained by them as hermits enhanced the family prestige of their successors. It was with some amount of pride that Khāravela was introduced in his inscription as a scion of a family of royal sages (*rājisi-vamsakula-viniśrita*), all of whom belonged to the Cedi royal house. Similarly the Janakas of Mithilā and the Brahmadattas of Benar represented two ancient lines of royal sages.

The great Brahmin hermits became noted as Brahmarshis. Among them, mention is made in the Jātakas of the sage Sarabhanga<sup>2</sup> who

<sup>1</sup> *Jātaka*, v, p. 247f.; *Mahā* . . . . . i, p. 450.

<sup>2</sup> Sarabhanga *Jātaka*, *Jātaka*, v, p. 125f.

was formerly commander-in-chief of Benares. He built his hermitage somewhere in the Vindhya region on the Godhāvarī. When he retired from the world, many others accompanied him. The number of hermits grew so large that he was compelled to ask his chief disciples to shift elsewhere taking with them as many of the hermits as possible under the circumstances. By his command they went to build hermitages in different kingdoms and countries. Kisavaccha was one of them. Sarabhaṅga is described as a hermit who wore three garments of birch-bark. According to the Aranyakāṇḍa of the Rāmāyaṇa Sarabhaṅga's hermitage was situated not far from Pañcavati. It was Sarabhaṅga who keeping Rāma in his view, entered the burning funeral pyre and proceeded to the eternal world of Brahmā in the resurrected divine form of a *kumāra*. It was undoubtedly a common practice with some of the hermits to die like heroes either by diving into water, or by bodily walking into fire or by a fall from a height.

The *isipabbajā* of Mahāgovinda, the Brahmin Purohita of king Renu of Videha, accompanied by the seven reigning kings, six other Purohitas in a large retinue of the citizens of seven kingdoms, as described in the Mahāgovinda Suttanta<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 220f.

and the Jātakas, produced a very deep impression in the country. A popular chronicle, embodied in the *Ānguttara Nikāya*, bears an eloquent testimony to it. Mahāgovinda is claimed to have a direct communion with Brahmā Sanamkumāra as a happy result of the cultivation of the four Brahmavihāras: Mettā, Karunā, Muditā and Upekkhā. The Tsigili Sutta in the *Majjhima Nikāya*<sup>1</sup> contains a similar chronicle of five hundred Pacceka-buddhas who are otherwise described as great sages of old, and the Khaggavisāna Sutta in the *Sutta-nipāta*<sup>2</sup> and the Pacceka-buddha Apadāna in the *Apadāna*<sup>3</sup> contain distinct utterances of them. In historical times, Bāvari, the chaplain of king Pasenadi of Kosala, retired from the world and built a hermitage on the Godhāvari (Godāvari) in the Vindhya region. The Pārāyanā Vagga in the *Sutta-nipāta*<sup>4</sup> preserves a glorious tradition of Bāvari along with his sixteen disciples. As the Jātakas clearly attest, among the tāpasas there were many who practised *Yoga* or *Jhāna*, and mastered as many as eight *Samāpattis*. There is evidence also to prove that the neighbourhood of the hermitages became sites afterwards of many important

<sup>1</sup> Vol. III, p. 68f<sup>2</sup> pp. 6-12<sup>3</sup> Vol. I, pp. 7-14.<sup>4</sup> p. 190f.

flourishing cities like Kapilavatthu, Sāvatthī,<sup>1</sup> Kākandī, and Mākandī. Thus the jungles were converted into royal capitals and delightful human localities.

In the instances where the Tāpasas lived all alone or with their families and resident pupils, we cannot conceive of the possibility of a corporate or congregational life. They lived more or less a domestic life in the forest paying occasional visits to the neighbouring hermitages. Occasionally they had to appear in human localities for the collection of salt or to keep invitations from kings. The religious homes in the forests served as a meeting place of the lovers ending in marriage.

It is correctly pointed out that according to the Aranyakānda of the *Rāmāyaṇa*, Rāma, while in exile with Sītā and Laksmaṇa, walked from hermitage to hermitage from Ayodhyā on the Sarayū to the Pañcavatī on the Godāvāri.<sup>1</sup> The Sarabhaṅga Jātaka also shows that in travelling from Benares to the same destination, one had to follow a *ekapadikamagga* or narrow foot-track under the guidance of a *vanacaraka*.<sup>2</sup> But when Bāvari built his hermitage near the Pañcavatī during the reign of Pasenadi, there came into existence a high road connecting

<sup>1</sup> Sir Asutosh Mookerji's *Silver Jubilee Volume*, vi, p. 412f

<sup>2</sup> Jātaka, v, p. 132.

Rājagaha with Patitīthāna. Thus the hermits and *vanacarakas* co-operated in exploring the forest regions and gradually bringing into existence high roads and trade-routes.

The corporate or congregational life became manifest among the hermits when a large number of them came to live in one and the same hermitage, e.g., in the big *assama* or hermitage of Sarabhaṅga in the Kavīttha forest on the Godhāvari. In the Buddha's time, there were three settlements or colonies of the Jatīlas under three Kassapa brothers in the three divisions of the Gayākhetta.<sup>1</sup> The Pali legend concerning Uruvelā seeks to bring out the fact that when in ancient times the hermits came to the place to atone for their sins, there was no corporate life among them.<sup>2</sup> Even among the Jatīlas forming three distinct groups, the tie in each group was rather domestic than congregational. Their leaders, the three Kassapa brothers, were born in a Brahmin family of Magadha. They were great personalities; all the inhabitants of Aṅga and Magadha highly revered them. They were fire-worshippers by their cult, the believers in the great sanctity of the waters of the Gayā river.<sup>3</sup> The people from all parts of India came on pilgrimage to

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vinaya*, i, p. 31f.

<sup>2</sup> Barua, *Gāyā and Buddhagayā*, Vol. I, p. 99

<sup>3</sup> *Udāna*, p. 6.

Gayā to perform the holy ablution in a sincere belief that by bathing in the Gayā river they could wash off their sins. There were other sacred rivers where similar ablutions were performed. The Buddhist criticism of the belief and the practice was not without its value.<sup>1</sup> But the belief served as a strong incentive to bathing in the sacred rivers the water of which was hygienic and good for health.

During the period under notice there existed in Northern India various orders of Paribbājakas or Wanderers, who, in the language of Rhys Davids, 'were teachers or sophists who spent eight or nine months of every year wandering about precisely with the object of engaging in conversational discussions on matters of ethics and philosophy, nature lore and mysticism. Like the Sophists among the Greeks, they differed very much in intelligence, in earnestness and in honesty'.<sup>2</sup> These wandering ascetics, particularly those who were called Brāhmaṇa Paribbājakas,<sup>3</sup> were representatives of the fourth or last stage of progressive life. They were known as mendicants (bhikkhus) because they depended for their sustenance on alms collected from door to door,

<sup>1</sup> *Majjhima*, i, p. 36f, *Vatthupama Sutta*; *Udāna*, p. 6, *Therīgāthā*, pp. 146 47. Gāthās of Punnikā

<sup>2</sup> *Buddhist India*, p. 141.

<sup>3</sup> *Anguttara*, i, p. 157; B. C. Law, *Historical Gleanings*, Ch II.

as one-garment men (*ekasātakas*), as they used to clothe themselves with one piece of cloth, and as shavelings (*muṇḍakas*), as they shaved their heads clean as a mark of distinction from the Tāpasas who were all Jatilas (wearers of matted hair) and from the Brahmin householders who wore a crested lock on their head. As distinguished from the tāpasas they lived a homeless life, without having a fixed residence save and except during the rainy season when they took shelter in deserted houses (*suññāgāra*), caves (*guhā*), rocky caverns (*kandarā*) and the like. Some of them went about naked and were known as *acelakas* or *naggapabbajitas*. Those whose garments consisted in antelope-skin were called *cammasātakas*. The canonical Pali texts introduce to us no less than 30 wandering teachers who were either leaders or members of various orders of Indian ascetics, the number of members of each varying from 300 to 3,000. Some of them were known by their nick-names, some by the names of the *gottas* they belonged to, some by their external signs and some by their religious practices. They were all contemporaries of the Buddha and so of Mahāvīra. Potthapāda<sup>1</sup>, the rheumatic, had 300 followers; Bhaggavagotta<sup>2</sup>, the wanderer, belonged to the

<sup>1</sup> Potthapāda Sutta, *Dīgha*, i.

<sup>2</sup> *Dīgha*, iii, p. 1.

Bhārgava family. Pāṭikaputta<sup>1</sup> was an *acelaka* - or naked ascetic. Nigrodha<sup>2</sup>, Sandaka<sup>3</sup>, Sāmaṇḍaka<sup>4</sup>, Ajita<sup>5</sup>, Sarabha<sup>6</sup>, Ānnabhāra<sup>7</sup>, Varadhara<sup>8</sup>, Uttiya<sup>9</sup>, Kokanada<sup>10</sup>, Potaliya<sup>11</sup>, Moliyasīvaka<sup>12</sup>, Sajjha<sup>13</sup>, Sutavā<sup>14</sup>, Kunḍaliya<sup>15</sup>, Timbaruka<sup>16</sup>, Nandiya<sup>17</sup>, Vacchagotta<sup>18</sup>, Sūcīmukhī<sup>19</sup>, Susīma<sup>20</sup>, Uggāhamāna<sup>21</sup>, Pilotika<sup>22</sup>, Potaliputta<sup>23</sup>, Sakuladāyī<sup>24</sup>, Vekhanassa<sup>25</sup> (Vaikhānasa), Dighanakha<sup>26</sup>, Māgandiya<sup>27</sup>, Sabhiya<sup>28</sup>, and

<sup>1</sup> *Dīgha*, iii, pp. 12-35.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, pp. 36-57.

<sup>3</sup> *Majjhima*, i, p. 513.

<sup>4</sup> *Aṅguttara*, v, pp. 120-121.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, v, p. 230.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 185.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 29.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 176.

<sup>9</sup> *Ibid.*, v, p. 193.

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, v, p. 196.

<sup>11</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 100.

<sup>12</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, p. 356.

<sup>13</sup> *Ibid.*, iv, p. 371.

<sup>14</sup> *Ibid.*, ix, p. 369.

<sup>15</sup> *Saṃyutta*, v, p. 73.

<sup>16</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, p. 22.

<sup>17</sup> *Ibid.*, v, p. 11.

<sup>18</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, p. 257.

<sup>19</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, pp. 238-240.

<sup>20</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, pp. 119-128.

<sup>21</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, p. 22.

<sup>22</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 175.

<sup>23</sup> *Ibid.*, iii, p. 207.

<sup>24</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, pp. 1-22.

<sup>25</sup> *Ibid.*, ii, pp. 40-44.

<sup>26</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 467.

<sup>27</sup> *Ibid.*, i, p. 501.

<sup>28</sup> *Cūṭa-nipāta*, p. 91.

\* Sañjaya were the most notable of the class. Their movements were restricted more or less to the Majjhimadesa. Apart from the Brāhmaṇa Paribbājakas, the Pali texts repeatedly speak of the six influential orders of *Samanas*, the leaders of whom were known to the Buddhists as six *tīthiyas* or leading thinkers: Pūraṇa Kassapa, Makkhali Gosāla, Pakudha Kaccāyana, Ajitakesakambalī, Sañjaya Belatṭhaputta or Belatṭhiputta, and Nigantha Nātaputta<sup>1</sup>. Of them the sixth was no other than Mahāvīra, the reputed founder of Jainism. Sañjaya, as his name implies, was a Khattiya of the Belatṭha clan or one born of a princess of the Belatṭha family. The remaining four were Brahmins by birth. They too by their habits of life were all wandering teachers, shavelings and mendicants and differed from the Paribbājakas as a class only in their attitude towards the world and the existing social and religious institutions. Pūraṇa as a transcendentalist claimed that the soul (*attā*) cannot be affected by the moral or immoral action of men. Gosāla was, according to one of the Jain traditions, the son of a Brahmin Paribbājaka couple, and according to another, the son of a Brahmin who was rich in cattle (*gobahula*). He was pre-eminently a Kosalan teacher. Philosophically he was a determinist

---

<sup>1</sup> *Digha*, i, p. 47f.; Kern, *Manual of Indian Buddhism*, p. 92f.

and ethically a fatalist. Pakudha Kaccāyāna, identified by some scholars with Kavandhin Kātyāyana of the *Praśnopaniṣad*<sup>1</sup> was an eternalist, maintaining that both soul and the world are unchanging realities. Ajita distinguished by the garment of hair which he used to wear, was an avowed atheist denying as he did the possibility of continuance of personal existence after death and consequently the possibility of having reward and retribution for the deeds done in this life. These teachers were all dogmatic in the way they held their respective opinions. As distinguished from them, Sañjaya of the Belatṭha clan who is identified in the *Mahāvastu* with the Wanderer Sañjaya passed as a great sceptic (*Amarāvikkhepaka*, *Ardhamāgadhi Aṇṇānika*). Niganṭha of the Nāta or Jñātri clan of Vesālī is distinguished from the rest as the propounder of a system of Cātuyāmasaṃvara or fourfold self-restraint. This is only a rough and ready description of the founders of six different orders and leaders of six different schools of thought who held the field when the Buddha had just started on his career as a religious teacher<sup>2</sup>.

We are nowhere given in the early texts of Jainism and Buddhism a specific description of

<sup>1</sup> *Pras.* I.I.

<sup>2</sup> For details from Buddhist and Jain texts, *vide* B. C. Law, *Historical Clearings*, Ch. III.

the Tāpasas, Paribbājakas or Samanas, taken order by order or school by school, either as regards their food or as regards their dress, habits and goals. All that we can gather from them is only a general description, which is likely to prove misleading. In the Pali Kas-sapasihanāda Sutta, we read, for instance, 'He feeds on potherbs, on wild rice, on nīvāra seeds, on leather parings, on the water-plant called hata, on the fine powder which adheres to the grains of rice beneath the husk, on the discarded scum of boiling rice, on the flour of oilseeds, on grasses, on cowdung, on fruits and roots from the woods, on fruits that have fallen of themselves'.<sup>1</sup>

This list of ascetic practices concerning food applies mainly to the Tāpasas, and partially only to the Ājīvikas who were followers of Makkhali Gosāla, Nanda Vaccha and Kisa Samkicca.

The following account of practices concerning garment and behaviour is applicable partly to the Tāpasas and partly to the clothed Paribbājakas, and, *mutatis mutandis*, to the Acelakas and some of the Samana orders: 'He wears

---

<sup>1</sup> *Dialogues of the Buddha*, S.B.B., ii, p. 230. Sākabhakkho vā hoti, sāmākabhakkho hoti, nīvārabhakkho vā hoti, daddulabhakkho vā hoti, hatabhakkho vā hoti, kanabhakkho vā hoti, ācāmabhakkho vā hoti, pīvīlakabhakkho vā hoti, trupabhakkho vā hoti, gomaya-bhakkho vā hoti, varanamūla phalāhāro yāpeti pavattaphala bhojt. *Dīgha*, i, p. 166.

hempen cloth; mixed hempen cloth ; cloths taken from corpses and thrown away; clothing made of rags picked up from a dust heap, of the bark of the Tiriṭaka tree; the natural hide of a black antelope; a dress made of a network of strips of a black antelope's hide; of Kuśa grass fibre; a garment of bark; a garment made of small slips or slabs of wood (shingle) pieced together; a blanket of human hair; of horses' tails; of the feathers of owls.

He is a plucker-out-of-hair-and-beard, a stander-up, a croucher-down-on-the-heels, a bed-of-thorns-man. He uses a plank bed, sleeps on the bare ground, sleeps always on one side, a dust and dirt wearer, lives and sleeps in the, open air, does not mind whatsoever seat is offered to him, goes down into water thrice a day to wash away his sins'.<sup>1</sup> Here the two practices of plucking out of both hair and beard and standing up rejecting the use of a seat are applicable also to the Jaina mendicants. Lastly, the account of the practices concerning the mode of collecting food and eating may be shown to apply to the Acolaka class of the Paribbājakas and the Ājīvika and Jaina types of the Samanās:

'He goes naked, performs his bodily functions and eats food in a standing posture, licks his

---

<sup>1</sup> *Dialogues of the Buddha*, op. cit., p. 230f.; *Dīgha*, i, pp. 166-7.

hands clean after eating, when on his rounds for alms, if politely requested to step nearer or to wait a moment, he passes stolidly on, refuses to accept food if it is brought to him before he has started on his round, if it has been prepared specially for him, to accept any invitation, to accept food direct from the mouth of the pot or pan lest those vessels should be struck or scraped on his account. He will not accept food placed within the threshold, placed among the sticks or pestles. He does not accept food from persons while they are eating, from a woman with child, from a mother giving suck, from a woman when she is in her private chamber. He will not accept food where a dog is standing by or flies are swarming round. He will not accept fish nor meat, nor strong drink, nor intoxicants, nor gruel. He feeds on the four kinds of filth (cowdung, cow's urine, ashes and clay). He never drinks cold water. He is contented with alms received from one house only, or from two houses, or so on up to only seven houses. He keeps himself going on only one alms or only two, or so on up to only seven. He takes his food only once a day, or once every two days, or so on up to once every seven days or up to even half a month'.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Based on the *Dialogues of the Buddha*, op. cit., p. 227f.; *Digha*, 2, p. 166.

The Jaina *Aupapātika Sūtra* speaks of the Tāpasas as those *religieux* who adopted the Vānaprastha mode of life on the banks of the sacred rivers typified by the Ganges. They were either fire-worshippers, family men or those who slept on the bare ground. They were either sacrificers, or performers of funeral rites, or owners of property. The water jugs and cooking pots were among their belongings. They followed different modes of bathing in the holy waters. Some of them used to blow conchshells, or were *kūladhumakas* (winnow-beaters). Some of them killed deer for venison and skin, and some killed elephants to make food provision minimising the slaughter of life. Some went about holding a stick erect, or with the gaze fixed on a particular direction. They used the bark of a tree as their garment, and lived either on the seashore or near water at the foot of a tree, feeding on water, air, water-plants, roots, bulbs, barks, flowers, fruits and seeds. They rendered their body cooked as it were by the heat of the five kinds of fire and stiffened by the sprinkling of water<sup>1</sup>.

The Sūtra mentions a class of recluses (*pabbaiyā-samanā*) who were addicted to sensual pleasures, vulgar ways and vaunting, and were fond of singing and dancing<sup>2</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> *Aupapātika Sūtra*, sec. 74

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid*, sec. 75

The same text distinguishes between the Brāhmaṇa and Kṣatriya Parivrājakas, and describes them as those *religieux* who either followed the Kāpila school of Sāṅkhya or the Bhārgava school of Yoga, or represented the four grades of Indian ascetics: Bahūdakā, Kuṭibratā (Kuṭicakā), Hamsā and Paramahamsā. Some of them were Kṛṣṇa Parivrājakas<sup>1</sup>. The Ājīvikas are placed in a different category, their description being the same as in Pali<sup>2</sup>. It may be noted that even in Gośāla's doctrine, the Ājīvika orders were distinguished from those of the Parivrājakas<sup>3</sup>.

A gradation of niṭṭhā or goals aimed at by the Tāpasis, Paribbājakas and Ājīvikas is suggested in the *Aupapātika Sūtra*, Buddhaghosa's *Papañcasūdanī*, some of the later Upaniṣads as well as Gośāla's doctrine of six *Abhijātas* or grades of spiritual advancement. The six grades are described in terms of six colours as the black (*kaṇha*), the blue (*nīla*), the red (*lohita*), the turmeric (*halidda*), the white (*sukka*), and the supremely white (*paramasukka*<sup>4</sup>). Corresponding to them we have mention of the following six grades in the *Samnyāsa Upaniṣad*: ātura,

<sup>1</sup> *Aupapātika Sūtra*, secs. 76–81.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, sec. 120.

<sup>3</sup> *Dīgha*, i, p. 54: *ekūnapaññāsa-ājīvasate, ekūnapaññāsa-Paribbājakasate.*

<sup>4</sup> Barus in *I.H.Q.*, iii, p. 257f.

*kuṭicaka*, *bahūdaka*, *hamsa*, *paramahamsa* and *turiyātītāparamahamsa*, *saniyama* or *aniyama*. According to the Upaniṣads, the goal of the ātura (=kaṇha) is Bhūrloka, that of the *kuṭicaka* (=nīla) is Bhuvarloka, that of the *bahūdaka* (=lohita) is Svargaloka, that of the *hamsa* (=halidda) is Tapoloka, that of the *paramahamsa* (=sukka) is Satyaloka, and that of the *turiyātītāparamahamsa* (=paramasukka) is Kaivalya. The *turiyātītāparamahamsa* culminates as *avadhūta*. According to the *Aupapātika Sūtra*, the destiny of worldly men is Vāṇamantra, that of the Vānaprastha Tāpasas is the world of the Jyotiṣi gods, that of the Paribbājakas is Brahmaloka, and that of the Ājīvikas is Acyutapada<sup>1</sup>. And according to Buddhaghosa, the goal of the Brāhmaṇas is Brahmaloka, that of the Tāpasas is Ābhassaraloka, that of the Paribbājakas is Subhakiṇṇaloka and that of the Ājīvikas is Anantamānasa<sup>2</sup>.

The various forms of penances (*tapas*, *ḍuk-karakārikā*) constituted the external feature of their religious efforts, and the various modes of *Yoga* or *Jhāna* practised by them constituted its internal feature. In the Jātakas, many among the ancient hermits are said to have mastered the eight *saṃpattis*, each of them representing a particular form of ecstasy or

<sup>1</sup> *Aupapātika Sūtra*, secs. 70, 71, 74, 81, 120.

<sup>2</sup> *Papañcasūdanī*, pt. II, p. 1f. & Cūlasīhanāda Sutta.

hypnotic trance. The *Ariyapariyesana Sutta*<sup>1</sup> and other Pali texts mention Ālārakālāma and Uddakarāmaputta as two great Yogis under whom the Buddha learnt the practice of Yoga, better Rājayoga, on his way from Rājagaha to Uruvelā. While at Uruvelā, he practised the hard penances and appāṇakajhānas (i.e. kumbhakas of Hathayoga) of the Acelaka or Ājīvika class of ascetics.

The common people who were the lay supporters of these various orders of hermits, ascetics and recluses, attached much importance to the austerities and believed in the infinite possibilities of the Yoga practice<sup>2</sup>. The popular belief is that with the development of the supernormal faculties, being one, the gifted man becomes many, having become many, becomes one again. He becomes visible or invisible at his sweet will, he can fly through air like birds on wings, can easily walk on water, as if on solid ground, and can easily go to the further side of a wall or rampart or hill, as if through air, feeling no obstruction. Even the sun and the moon he can touch and feel with his own hands. He can visit any place he likes, even the world of Brahmā. For the self-articulation and its effects through *Yoga*

<sup>1</sup> *Majjhima*, i, p. 160f.

<sup>2</sup> Rhys Davids, *Dialogues of the Buddha*, S.B.B., ii, p. 208f.

or *Jhāna*,<sup>1</sup> the popular simile was that of a clever potter making pots of any shape out of properly prepared clay.<sup>2</sup>

Thus the Yoga practice and miracle went together. In popular estimation the greater the psychic power, the superior was the Master. Just as the wrestlers in an arena measured their strength with each other, so did the ascetics, and the contest was eagerly witnessed by the people. The Sāvatthī miracle performed by the Buddha was intended to establish his superiority over the rest of the competitors in the field of psychic power. The question with the people who thronged to witness the performance was— who is the greater Yogi, the Buddha or the Titthiyas? <sup>3</sup> The Ajivikas claimed their third Titthānīkara, Gośāla, as one of the three greatest Avadhūtas in history<sup>4</sup>. The Jainas proclaimed that their last Titthānīkara, Mahāvira, was the all-knowing and all-seeing Master, possessed of an infinite knowledge<sup>5</sup>. They further declared that in all postures of his body, the supreme knowledge and vision (*nāṇadassanam*) were always present with him. Similarly the

<sup>1</sup> Keith, *Buddhist Philosophy*, pp. 30, 42, 43, 90, 119, etc.; Law, *Concepts of Buddhism*, Chap. VI.

<sup>2</sup> *Dīgha*, i, p. 78f.; *Dial. B.*, op. cit., p. 88f.

<sup>3</sup> *Jātaka*, iv, p. 264f.; *Mahāvastu*, iii, p. 115.

<sup>4</sup> *Anguttara*, iii, p. 384; *Sumangalavilāśini*, i, p. 162.

<sup>5</sup> *Majjhima*, i, p. 92f.; Law, *Mahāvira*, p. 43.

Buddhists contended for the superiority of their Master over all by the fact of his experience of the highest state of consciousness through the ninth *samāpatti* called *saññā-vedayitanirodha*<sup>1</sup>. Among the Buddha's immediate disciples, Moggallāna was claimed to have occupied the foremost rank in respect of the possession of psychic power<sup>2</sup>.

The man gifted with psychic power passed also as the man of wisdom, the greatest Yogi figuring sometimes as the greatest rationalist. The *Samaṇa-Brāhmaṇa* period was indeed a period during which the religious experiences were sought to be rationalised. So we need not be astonished at all that the bands of the wandering ascetics, Paribbājakas and *Samaṇas*, appeared in the scene as great controversialists and disputants. The royal parks and gardens of the aristocrats were their halting places where they engaged themselves in serious discussions. The philosophical contest was no less an interesting occasion for the people than the miracle. Sometimes they talked so loudly that the place where they halted or resided became very much noisy like a fish market<sup>3</sup>. We hear of a Tindukacira or Tinduka garden which

<sup>1</sup> *Majjhima*, i, p. 296.

<sup>2</sup> *Anguttara*, i, p. 23; *Majjhima*, i, p. 251f.; E. J. Thomas, *History of Buddhist Thought*, p. 52.

<sup>3</sup> *Majjhima*, ii, Sakuludāyi Sutta, (Mahā and Cūla).

resounded with the uproar of doctrines (*samaya-pavādaka*)<sup>1</sup>. To provide them with a fixed residence during the rains, their lay supporters, kings, queens, princes, courtiers and bankers, permanently dedicated the ārāmas to this or that particular order of Paribbājakas and Samanas. The result was that the ārāmas gradually became known as Paribbājaka-ārāmas, or converted into *vihāras* or monastic establishments. The mountain caves where they used to seek shelter during the rains, were likewise turned into *lenas* or cave-dwellings.

The Saravana<sup>2</sup> near Śrāvastī was the place where the Ajivika leader, Maśkarī Gōśala, was born of Parivrājaka parents. The Jetavana<sup>3</sup>, on the south side of Sāvatthī was originally a private garden of Prince Jeta, which was subsequently converted into a vihāra by the banker, Anāthapindika, for the Buddha and his disciples. The Pubbārāma<sup>4</sup> or the garden on the east side of the city was similarly converted into a vihāra by Viśakhā, daughter-in-law of the banker, Migāra, and offered as

<sup>1</sup> This was the famous garden of queen Mallikā in the suburb of Sāvatthī, provided at first with one shed and subsequently with many sheds to make accommodations for the wandering ascetics or recluses *Dīgha*, i, p. 178

<sup>2</sup> B. C. Law, *Śrāvastī in Indian Literature* (Memoir A.S I, No. 50), p. 10.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid*, p. 10

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid*, pp. 10, 22-25.

a gift to the Buddhist Saṅgha of all times and all quarters. The Sahassambavana<sup>1</sup> outside the city of Palāsapura became a Jaina residence during Mahāvīra's lifetime. The garden of the Śākyā Nyagrodha near the city of Kapilavatthu was transformed into a vihāra and offered as a gift to the Buddha and his followers. The same as to the Mahāvana<sup>2</sup> near Vesāli and the Vāluvana<sup>3</sup> and Jivaka's Mango-grove<sup>4</sup> near Rājagaha. A retreat for the Paribbājakas was built on the landed estate of Udumbarikā-devī, not far from Rājagaha. Pāvārika's Mango-grove at Nālandā and the Gaggarā tank at Campā, the capital of Āṅga, were famous as halting places of the wandering ascetics and recluses; the places or sites that were attractive to this class of Indian *religieux* may be easily inferred from the two famous utterances of the Buddha, cited below:

First, the Buddha, at the first sight of Uruvelā, observed: 'Pleasantly picturesque is this part of land. Delightful is the sight of grassy woodland. The river (Nerañjarā) is flowing on in a glassy stream showing the bathing places with gradual descent of steps presenting a charming landscape, and affording glimpses into

<sup>1</sup> *Uvāsagadasa*, ed. by Hoernle, Chaps. IV-VII.

<sup>2</sup> Law, *Some Kṣatriya Tribes of Ancient India*, p. 46f.

<sup>3</sup> Law, *Rājagrīha in Ancient Literature*, pp. 11-12.

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 12-13.

the neighbouring hamlets, easy of access. This must be the fitting place for the scion of a noble race strenuously striving after the highest attainment<sup>1</sup>.

Secondly, the Buddha's happy reminiscences of the sites at Rājagaha are vividly recorded thus in the Mahāparinibbāna Suttanta: 'Delightful is Rājagaha, delightful is the Gijjhakūṭa mountain, delightful is the Gotama Nigrodha, delightful is the Corapapāta, the Sattapannīguhā on a side of the Vebhāra mountain, the Sappasondika-slope in Sitavana, the Tapodārāma, the Vēluvana Kalandaka-nivāpa, the Mangogrove of Jīvaka, and the Maddakuṇchi Deer Park.

There verily I dwelt at Rājagaha in the Sattapanna cave on one side of the Vebhāra mountain. There verily I dwelt at Rājagaha on Kālasilā on a side of the Isigili mountain'. So on and so forth<sup>2</sup>.

It may be noted that the Kālasilā was the very rock on which the Jaina recluses could be seen practising austerity in a standing posture from dawn to dusk<sup>3</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> *Majjhima*, i, pp. 166-167; *Mahāvastu*, ii, p. 123f.; *Lalitavistara* (Mitra's ed.), p. 311; Barua, *Gayā and Buddhagayā*, pp. 103, 162.

<sup>2</sup> *Dīgha*, ii, p. 116f.; Law, *Rājagrīha in Ancient Literature* (Memor. A.S.I., No. 58), p. 7f. The Theratherigāthā contains similar reminiscences.

<sup>3</sup> *Majjhima*, i, p. 92.

In the opinion of D. R. Bhandarkar, the ancient ṛṣis were not aggressive propagators of their faith<sup>1</sup>. As distinguished from them, the Paribbājakas and Saṁaṇas actively propagated the same amongst all classes of people. The happy result of it was that already by the time of Piyadasi-Asoka almost the whole of India was Aryanised or Hinduised by them, the Saṁaṇas and the Brāhmaṇas<sup>2</sup>. They were the people who prepared the ground for the vigorous Buddhist missionary work, organised during the latter part of the reign of Aśoka. Before that time the spread of Buddhism was restricted more or less to the confines of Majjhimadesa<sup>3</sup>. And yet the missionary zeal which enabled Buddhism to become a great civilising influence in the world, lay in the epoch-making utterance of the Buddha with which he urged his very first batch of advanced disciples to go forth in all directions and preach the new message of the Dhamma, not two of them following the same direction, for the good and happiness of many, himself taking the lead in the matter<sup>4</sup>.

In carrying on this noble mission, some of the hermits, ascetics and recluses had to play the

<sup>1</sup> Bhandarkar, *Carmichael Lectures*, 1918, p. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Asoka's R.E., xiii; Barua, *Gayā and Buddhagaya*, i, p. 262.

<sup>3</sup> *Kathāvatthu*, i, 3; I.H.Q., vii (1931), p. 368.

<sup>4</sup> *Vinaya Mahāvagga*: 'Caratha, bhikkhave, cārikamp bahujanahitāya bahujanasukhāya', etc.

rôle of martyrs. The Jātakas and Kautilya's *Arthaśāstra* record just a few typical instances of martyrdom suffered in the past. Ajjuna, king of the Kekayas, caused annoyance to the sage, Gotama. Dandaki, king of Dandaka, insulted Kisavaccha, the guileless ascetic. King Mejha ill-treated Mātaṅga, the far-famed sage. The Andhaka-Venhu youths of Dvāravatī roughly handled Kaṇha-Dipāyana and ultimately put him to death. Kalābu, king of Benares, tortured an ascetic who was a preacher of patience and forbearance. Nālikira (or Nālikera), king of Kalinga, cut the body of an ascetic into pieces and offered his limbs to dogs to devour. In one instance, a king pierced a harmless ascetic with an arrow under the misapprehension that he stood in his way as ill-luck and spoiled his game. Even in historical times, the Buddha's great disciple and powerful popular preacher, Moggallāna, was surrounded and killed by brigands (alleged to have been employed by his rivals in other sects).

There were two effective ways of checking the tyrants and sinners: the pronouncement of a curse and the invention of the stories of terrible sufferings in different purgatories. But the Indian ascetics also invented the stories of a happy and glorious life in different heavens to induce the people to lead a moral and pious

life.' The early Jaina and Buddhist texts are full of vivid pictures of purgatories and paradises. 'According to the *Rāmāyaṇa*, in order to prevent disturbances to the sacrifices in the āśramas, caused by the aboriginal tribes, the hermits and sages had to seek occasionally the aid of the princes and warriors for an armed protection. But left to themselves and determined to remain non-violent and non-harming, they had to make patience, forbearance, etc., a virtue of necessity.'

The account of Mahāvīra's early wanderings in the country of Lāḍha in the *Ācārāṅga Sūtra* shows that the rude inhabitants of the place used to set dogs with the cry of *chucchū* upon the ascetics when they were found near their localities<sup>1</sup>. But as borne out by the reminiscences of Mahāvīra and the Buddha, the mischief-makers whom the lonely ascetics had to reckon with were the cowherds (*gopālakā*) who made practical jokes on them<sup>2</sup>.

The doctrinal basis of various stories of heaven and hell was the widely current popular belief in paraloka or life hereafter. The doctrine of Karma was founded on this very belief. So much stress was laid upon the betterment of human existence in the life to come that the

<sup>1</sup> *Ācārāṅga Sūtra*, i, 8.3-4.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, 18.3-10; *Mahāsihanāda Sutta*, *Majjhima*, i, p. 79.

general impression among the people of the Buddha's time was that religion was needed for furthering the worldly interest only. It was from this impression that king Ajātasattu of Magadha was led to have interviews with the contemporary religious teachers for enlightenment on the question as to the possibility of the immediate fruit of religious life in the present existence. In the *Sāmaññaphala* and other suttas, we read that the contemporary religious teachers whom he waited upon gave answers that were not to the point. He then saw the Buddha who satisfied him with a relevant answer. The Buddha's arguments went to establish that religion, if rightly and earnestly-practised, was of immense service to men and women in the present world, its primary function being to improve the personal, family, social, economic, moral, intellectual and spiritual status of them by showing them the path of deliverance from bondage in all its degrees and forms.<sup>1</sup>

In corroboration of the drift of the Buddha's reply, we may note that Indian religions of the age encouraged various works of social piety, e.g., construction of roads and bridges, planting of shade trees, excavation of tanks, digging of wells, laying out of fruit gardens,

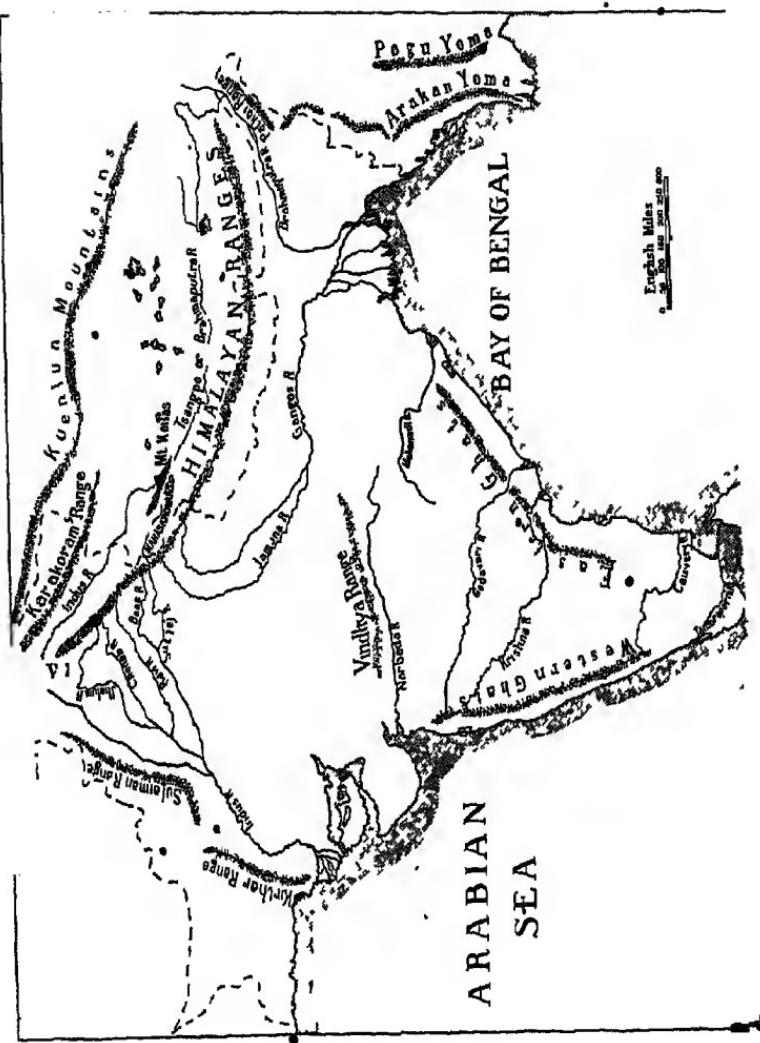
---

*Dīgha, 1, p. 60f.*

supply of drinking water at suitable places for the thirsty, travellers and beasts, opening of charity halls, supply of medicinal roots, fruits, leaves and herbs, maintenance of public granaries and storehouses as provisions against famine and starvation, etc. The voice was raised against the servitude of men and women, the slave-trade was prohibited among the followers and the manumission of slaves was encouraged. The religious orders of the Samanas admitted even the slaves and Suddas into their fold and proved that given a chance, a barber like Upali could occupy a foremost rank among the elect.

The door of higher religious life was also kept open to the women of all social grades and ranks, nay, even to the fallen women, some of whom made their mark in history by their changed life.

By preaching the doctrine of *Ahimsā*, the religions brought about a change in the art of cooking and items of food. They persistently sought to create a social order based on cordiality, fellow-feeling and love. The vigorous religious propaganda carried on during the period went to mitigate and humanise the most rigorous and barbarous laws<sup>1</sup>. The religions served to improve the moral tone and taste of society. The Buddhist Vinaya co-



sin.



## INDEX

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>Abbhutadhammas, 270<br/>     Abhaya, prince, 167<br/>     Abhidhamma, 267<br/>     Abhijātas (grades of spiritual advancement), 230<br/>     Aodhutapadi, 199<br/>     Acelakas, 222, 223, 226, 227, 232<br/>     Aciravati, 6, 11, 23, 26, 46, 132<br/>     Acrobat, 177, 179<br/>     Actors, professional, 179<br/>     Acyutapada, 231<br/>     Addhariyas, 201, 253<br/>     Aiccchātra, 37<br/>     Ihlakkā, 22<br/>     Ihipati (issara), 169<br/>     Hoganāga, 39<br/>     Yātmavidyā, 255, 256<br/>     Ianistan, 17<br/>     Istantra, 259<br/>     hakāraka (officer fixing prices of commodities),<br/>     Japura, 39<br/>     Agideva, 101<br/>     Aggihutta (oblations to fire), 208<br/>     Agnates, 146, 147<br/>     ~ culturists, 154, 177<br/>     Asculturists (kassakā), 1, 159</p> | <p>Ahavvanaveda, 245<br/>     Ahetuvādā, 110<br/>     Ahicchatra, 37, 38, 97<br/>     Ahimsā, doctrine of, 242<br/>     Ahivātakaroga, 173<br/>     Ahoganga, 39<br/>     Aitareyas, 201<br/>     Aiyanagar, S. K., 78<br/>     Ajapatha, 71<br/>     Ajatasattu, 123, 124, 136, 137, 138, 159, 168, 241<br/>     Ajita Kesakambali, 223, 224, 225, 274<br/>     Ajitavati, 25<br/>     Ajjuna, 95, 96, 99, 101, 196, 239<br/>     Akiriyavādā, 110<br/>     Akkhānam (ballad recitation), 261<br/>     Akkharappabheda, 247, 24<br/>     Akkharikā (game of guessing at letters), 277<br/>     Alaka, 78, 108<br/>     Alarakalāma, see Ālāra-kalāma.<br/>     Alasanda, 68, 69, 83<br/>     Alberuni, 15<br/>     Alexandria, 83<br/>     Allahabad, 23<br/>     Allakappa, 34, 57, 128, 134<br/>     Alms houses, 171<br/>     Amarakanṭaka hills, 79</p> |
|---|--|

- Amarakoṣa, 81  
 Amarāvatī, 78  
 Amarāvikkhepaka, 225  
 Ambagāma, 53  
 Ambalatthikā, 49  
 Ambapālī, 167, 272  
 Ambassadors, 155  
 Ambaṭṭhas, 150  
 Anāthapindika, 175, 176, 235  
 Anatomy, 260  
 Anāvṛṣṭi, 172  
 Āndhaka, 108, 114, 271  
 Andhakas, 86, 103, 113, 114, 115, 142  
 Andhakavēṇhu, 103, 239  
 Andhakaviṣnu, 101  
 Āndhaka-Vṛṣnis, 95, 103  
 Andhapura, 79, 114  
 Andhra, 108, 115  
 Andhrā, 113  
 Āṅga, 19, 20, 24, 32, 33, 34, 50, 117, 119, 120, 121, 130, 135, 165, 220, 236, 282  
 Āṅgā, 117  
 Āṅga-Magadha, 70, 120  
 Āṅgas, 117, 118, 247, 267  
 Āṅgirasa, 147  
 Āṅgulimāla, 272  
 Āṅgutārpa, 50  
 Ānkaṭhā (sentinels), 178  
 Āñjanādevī, 102  
 Āñjanapabbata, 6  
 Āñjanavana, 31  
 Āñkura, 101  
 Ānnabhāra, 223  
 Anomā, 24, 54  
 Anotatta lake, 5, 10, 11, 63  
 Antaravedī, 20  
 Antarāpāṇas (godowns), 189  
 Antarikkhacarā (those in the firmament), 198, 199  
 Antevāśis (resident pupils), 287  
 Anupiya, 54  
 Anuvindakas, 109  
 Anuvyākhyānas (glosses), 250  
 Anuvyāfiṇanas, 286  
 Aparagayā, 48  
 Aparagodāna, 2, 9  
 Aparagoyāna, 2  
 Aparānta, 2, 16, 18, 67, 73, 108  
 Aparāntakas, 111  
 Aparasela, 78, 114  
 Apothecaries, 151  
 Appānakajhānas, 232  
 Appraisers, 152  
 Arabian Sea, 4, 67  
 Arakan Coast, 188  
 Arantuka, 36  
 Archers, 159  
 Archery, 159, 258  
 Architects, 152, 155, 179  
 Ardhamāgadhi, 225, 264, 265  
 Arindama, 121  
 Arithmetic (gaṇikā, rāśi, samkhāna), 245, 248, 250  
 Arrow-makers (cāpakkārā), 178, 179  
 Arthaśāstra (science of polity), 249

- Artists (rūpadakkha), 178  
 Arūpa, king, 108, 116  
 Arūpabrahmas, 199  
 Aryandom, 215  
 Aryans, 139  
 Ascetics, six grades of:  
     Ātura, 230  
     Bahūdakā, 230, 231  
     Hamsā, 230, 231  
     Kuṭibratā (Kuṭicakā),  
         230, 231  
     Paramahamsā, 230, 231  
     Turiyātītaramahamsa,  
         231  
 Asi, 42  
 Asikni, 98  
 Asitafijana, 100  
 Aśmakas, 107,  
 Aśoka, 15, 76, 78, 82, 106,  
     112, 113, 114, 115, 116,  
     119, 238  
 Assaka, 19, 34, 108, 114, 116,  
     130  
 Assakanṇa, 2  
 Assakas, 107  
 Assakenus, 107  
 Assamukha, 10  
 Assapura, 50, 120  
 Astaka, r̄si, 252  
 Astrologers, 152  
 Astrology, 246, 247, 249,  
     250, 266  
 Astronomers, 155  
 Astronomy, 246, 247, 249,  
     250, 266  
 Asurabhavana, 2  
 Asuras, 200, 201  
 Aśvaghoṣa, 272  
 Aśvakas, 107  
 Aśvamedha (horse-sacrifice),  
     205  
 Ātavicorā (criminal tribes  
     living in forests), 173  
 Athabbañaveda, 247  
 Atharvañaveda, 245, 250  
 Atharvāṅgrasas, 250, 251  
 Atharvaveda, 247  
 Attā (soul), 224  
 Attāhaka, country, 106  
 Attāhaka, king, 106  
 Attāhaka, r̄si, 147, 252  
 Attakulā, 123  
 Attakulikā, 123  
 Attidhopana (washing the  
     bones of the dead), 193  
 Avadhūta, 231  
 Avanti, 19, 22, 34, 74, 101  
     104, 105, 120, 134, 135  
     138  
 Avantī, 103, 104, 105, 107  
     108  
 Aviruddhakas, 198  
 Aviwa, 32  
 Ayodhyā, 23, 43, 100, 131  
     132, 215, 219  
 Ayojjhā, 100, 131, 132  
 Ābhasseraloka, 231  
 Ācāradāsā, 268  
 Ādiccabandhu, 127  
 Ādipuruṣa, 122  
 Ādityas, 146  
 Ādrakalpa, 34, 57

- Āgama, 256, 257, 260, 264, 267  
 Ājīvikas, 198, 200, 226, 227, 230, 231, 232, 233, 260, 265, 266  
 Ākāsagangā, 11  
 Ākāsatthā, 198, 199  
 Ālabhi, 32, 43  
 Ālāhana, 193  
 Ālārakālāma, 232, 284  
 Ālavaka, 58  
 Ālavī, 32, 58, 135  
 Āmākasusāna, 193  
 Āndhras, 113, 114  
 Andhrakas, 113  
 Āngeyas, 117  
 Āpaṇas (shops), 189  
 Āpastamba, 268  
 Āryāvarta, 5, 12  
 Āśā (Hope), 204  
 Āśadhāsena, 37  
 Ātura, 230  
 Āvattāgaṅgā, 11  
 Āyurveda, 249, 259, 260  
 Babbarā, 68, 71, 72, 86  
 Babylonia, 185  
 Baotrian Greeks, 83, 84, 101  
 Bahalagaṅgā, 11  
 Bahūdakā, 230  
 Bāhukā, 22  
 Bāhumati, 22  
 Bāhvyaas, 201  
 Bairāt, 76  
 Baladeva, 101, 198  
 Bālakalopakāra, 39, 41  
 Ballad-reciters, 152, 155, 179  
 Bandhupādāpaccā, 145  
 Baṅga, *vide* Vaṅga.  
 Bankers, 175  
 Banking facilities, 191  
 Barbara, 67, 84, 86  
 Barbers, 141, 177, 178  
 Bārāṇasī, 21, 24, 34, 129  
 Barbaricum, 72  
 Bareilly Dist., 37  
 Bārhadrathapura, 119  
 Bārhadrathas, 120  
 Baruṇā, 42  
 Barygaza, 76, 112  
 Basket-makers (nalakārā), 178, 179  
 Baskets (piṭakas), 267  
 Bath-attendants, 177, 178  
 Bathers (malamajjanasamā), 151  
 Baudhāyana, 20  
 Bāvarī, the chaplain, 157, 158, 218, 219, 283  
 Bāvharijjas, 201, 263  
 Bay of Bengal, 4  
 Beef-eating, 211  
 Beggars, 177  
 Belatṭha clan, 224, 225  
 Belatṭha family, 224  
 Benares, 112, 123, 129, 130, 159, 185, 188, 216, 217, 219, 239, 279, 281  
 Berar, 106  
 Berbai, 188  
 Besarh, 52  
 Besnagar, 84  
 Besyngēitai, 188  
 Bhaddikāsana, 209

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| Bhaddiya, 50                               | Bhirukaccha, 111  |
| Bhadrasana, 209                            | Bhoganagara, 53   |
| Bhadrāśva, 9                               | Bhoja, 73, 106  |
| Bhagalpur, 50                              | Bhojaputtas, sixteen, 105, 107                                      |
| Bhagavānpur, 56                            | Bhojakas, 106, 173  |
| Bhagga, 133                                | Bhopal, 26, 75  |
| Bhagga-Kārūṣas, 109                        | Bhṛgu, 252  |
| Bhaggas, 32, 34, 39, 110, 124, 134         | Bhṛgukaccha, 74, 76, 111  |
| Bhaggavagotta, 222                         | Bhummas (terrestrial), 198, 199                                     |
| Bhāgīrathi, 23, 37, 73                     | Bhūrloka, 231   |
| Bhāgīrathi-Gāṅgā, 23, 35                   | Bhūtagana Mt., 69   |
| Bhagu, 147, 252                            | Bhūtavidyā, 250   |
| Bhakti, 195, 203                           | Bhūvarloka, 231   |
| Bhalluka, 109                              | Bias, 69  |
| Bhandarkar, D. R., 104, 131, 238           | Bihar, 49, 61   |
| Bhāradvāja, 147, 252                       | Bihar-Sarif-Nawadah, 40   |
| Bharahavāsa, 1                             | Bimbisāra, 49, 87, 111, 119, 120, 123, 135, 136, 161, 165, 167, 280 |
| Bharata, 14, 104, 118, 129, 215            | Bindusāra lake, 10, 12  |
| Bhāratavarṣa, 3, 4, 8, 9, 13, 14, 121, 215 | Biology, 260  |
| Bhārgava family, 223                       | Bird-catching, 182  |
| Bhārgavas, 117                             | Birdpur Estate, 56  |
| Bharu, 111                                 | Birds, different species, 66, 183                                   |
| Bharukaccha, 111, 112, 187                 | Blacksmiths, 141, 178, 179  |
| Bhāsamaggam, 248                           | Bloch, J., 47   |
| Bhatiya, king, 120, 165                    | Bodhāyana, 268  |
| Bhattiya, 119, 120                         | Bodhi, prince, 110  |
| Bhavanavāsi, 199, 200                      | Begra, 60   |
| Bhesakajāvana, 32, 33                      | Bones, Washing the, 193   |
| Bhillas, 141                               | Botany, 260   |
| Bhilā, 26, 75, 109                         | Bouting 171   |
| Bhīma, king, 87, 106, 215                  | Bow-makers (usukārā), 178, 179                                      |
| Bhimaratha, king, 106                      |   |
| Bhiru, 111                                 |   |

- |                           |  |                   |  |
|---------------------------|--|-------------------|--|
| Bowmen                    | 178  | Buddhaghosa,      | 33, 36, 57,<br>93, 114, 115, 147, 175,<br>230, 231 |
| Brahmā,                   | 145, 197, 199, 203,<br>232   | Buddhakhetta,     | 289  |
| Brahmabandhu              | (Brahmā's<br>favourite), 163   | Buddhasāsanam,    | 246  |
| Brahmadatta,              | 98, 108, 118,<br>119, 120, 129, 130, 131   | Buffalo-fights,   | 171  |
| Brahmaloka,               | 231  | Bulis,            | 34, 128, 134                                       |
| Brāhmaṇa-candālā,         | 152  | Bull-fights,      | 171  |
| Brāhmaṇa-mahāśāla,        | 161,<br>175  | Bundelkhand,      | 40   |
| Brāhmaṇa Parivrājakas,    | 230  | Burglars          | (sandhichedaka),<br>172                            |
| Brāhmaṇas,                | 139, 142, 148,<br>150, 151, 152, 153, 154,<br>155, 158, 161, 162, 163,<br>174, 178, 180, 201, 213,<br>231, 238           | Burma,            | 187  |
| Brahmaputra,              | 64   | Butchers          | (goghātakas), 151                                  |
| Brahmarṣideśa,            | 21   | Cakkavatti        | (overlord), 15,<br>121, 169                        |
| Brahmarṣis,               | 216  | Calendar-makers,  | 152  |
| Brahmāvarta,              | 67   | Camdapannatti,    | 274  |
| Brahmavidyā,              | 250  | Cammakārā         | (leather-<br>workers), 140, 178                    |
| Brahmavihāras, four,      | 218  | Cammasāṭakas,     | 222  |
| Karunā,                   | 218  | Camoje,           | 85   |
| Mettā,                    | 218  | Campā,            | 21, 24, 34, 47, 50,<br>118, 119, 161, 185, 236     |
| Muditā,                   | 218  | Cāṇakya,          | 150  |
| Upekkhā,                  | 218  | Cañcu,            | a kind of famine,<br>172                           |
| Brahmayoni hill,          | 26, 47   | Candabhāgā,       | 6, 70, 73  |
| Bṛhadhratha,              | 119, 121   | Candadeva,        | 101  |
| Bridges, construction of, | 171  | Candagutta,       | 128, 172   |
| Broach,                   | 111  | Candāla-haddipau, | 141  |
| Buddha,                   | 120, 121, 125, 126,<br>127, 128, 131, 132, 136,<br>137, 138, 152, 212, 213,<br>220, 225, 233, 235, 236,<br>238, 239, 241 | Candālas,         | 140, 141, 193                                      |
| Buddhadatta,              | 77, 114  | Candapajjota,     | 104, 105, 120,<br>135, 166, 168                    |
|                           |  | Candragupta,      | 159  |
|                           |  | Cānki,            | 161  |

- Cāpakārā (arrow-makers), 178  
 Cape Comorin, 187  
 Caravān merchants, 70, 184  
 Carpenters (tacchakā), 160,  
     178, 179  
 Carriage-builders, 179,  
 Caste system, 192  
 Castor, 182  
 Cattle, 224  
 Cattle-breeders, 152  
 Cattle-breeding, 154  
 Cātubhedā (four vadas),  
     248  
 Cātumā, 55  
 Cātuyāmasamvara, 225  
 Caunojee, 85  
 Cavalry, 171  
 Cave-dwellings (lenas), 235  
 Caves, 222  
 Cedi, 116, 120, 121, 216  
 Cedis, 129, 133, 134  
 Cellanā, 123  
 Ceṭaka, 123, 136  
 Cetaputtā, 133  
 Cetirattha, 40  
 Ceti, 116, 120, 133  
 Chaddanta lake, 5, 65  
 Chanda (metre), 245, 265  
 Chandasā (prosody), 249,  
     263  
 Chandāvas, 201, 253  
 Chāndogyas, 201  
 Chāndokas, 201, 253  
 Chariot-drivers, 155, 178  
 • Charioteers, 171  
 Charsada, 72  
 Chathāgiri, 28  
 Chatravatī, 97  
 Chattapatha, 71  
 Chavachaddhakā (corpse-  
     throwers), 140  
 Chenab, 73, 98  
 Cheras, 115  
 Chicacole, 70, 115  
 China, 177  
 Chotanagpur hills, 59  
 Chryse Chora, 188  
 Cīmarattha, 178, 188  
 Cīnas, 86  
 Cirātas, 85  
 Cis-Sutlej States, 17  
 Cītā (funeral pyre), 193  
     Agnidagdhā, 193  
     Anagnidagdhā, 193  
 Citrakūṭa, 12, 64  
 Cittā, 175  
 Cleisobora, 103  
 Clerks (iūpadakkhā), 178  
 Cloth merchants (dussikā),  
     178, 179  
 Cock-fights, 171  
 Cognates, 146  
 Coins, 190  
     Aḍḍhakahāpana, 190  
     Aḍḍhamāsaka, 190  
     Aḍḍhapāda, 190  
     Chief medium of ex-  
         change, 190  
     Copper, 190  
     • Gold, 190  
         Kahāpana, 159, 190, 192  
         Kāksaṇika, 190  
     Māsaka, 190

- Pāda, 190  
 Rikkha, 190  
 Silver, 190  
 Suvarṇa, 190  
 Cola country, 114  
 Colas, 113, 115  
 Collectors of alms, 152  
 Comb-makers, 179  
 Comets, 200, 263  
 Commensality, 145  
 Commerce, 177  
 Conjeeveram, 78  
 Cobaltium, 145  
 Conveyancing (muddā), 249  
 Cooks (sūpikā), 177, 178  
 Cora, different kinds of, 172  
 Corajettha (ring-leader), 173  
 Corapapāta, 48, 173, 237  
 Coromandel Coast, 78  
 Corpse-burners, 179  
 Corpse-throwers, 140  
 Cotton, 182  
 Council, First Buddhist, 138  
     Second Buddhist, 138  
     Valabhi, 267  
 Courtesans, 166, 167, 168, 179, 192  
 Cowherds (gopālakā), 141, 240  
 Cow-killing, 211  
 Cowry Shells (sippikāni), 190  
 Craftsmen (sippikā), 151  
 Criminal justice, 171  
 Criminal tribes, 173
- Cūlaṇi Brahmadatta, king, 98  
 Culla-Himavanta, 4  
 Cullakalinga, 116  
 Cundadvolā, 48  
 Cundaṭhila, 42  
 Cundavila, 42  
 Cutch, 74, 111
- Daddarapura, 120  
 Dachivāhana, 118  
 Daivārḍhas, 103  
 Dakkhinakosala, 44  
 Dakkhinagiri, 49, 159  
 Dakkhinamadhura, 113  
 Dakkhinapañcāla      *vide*  
     Dakṣinapañcāla.  
 Dakkhināpatha, 73, 77, 104, 107, 115, 184  
 Dakṣināpāśicāla, 97  
 Dakṣinātya, 5, 12, 16, 18  
 Dālbhyas, 58  
 Dalkisor, 59  
 Damila, 78, 271  
 Damilarattha, 114  
 Damilas, 86, 113, 115  
 Dancers, 179  
 Dancing girls, 177, 179  
 Dandaka, 106, 239  
 Dandaki, king, 106, 116, 239  
 Dāndakya, 106  
 Dantapura, 79, 115, 116  
 Dappaṇa, 209  
 Darada, 67  
 Dārakatikiochā, 259  
 Darbhanga District, 62  
 Daripatha, 71

- Darius, king, 87  
 ^Darpana, 209  
 Dasan, 109  
 Dasanna country, 109  
 Dasannā, river, 109  
 Dasannas, 109  
 Daśaratha, 132  
 Daśarna, 215  
 Daśarṇabhadra, 215  
 Dead, disposal of the:  
     āñjana, 193  
     āmakususāna, 193  
     sivathikā, 193  
 Deccan, 115  
 Deer Park, 42  
 Desaka, 51, 60  
 Despised classes, five, 140  
 Devadaha, 55  
 Devadhammikas, 195  
 Devagabbhā, 100, 102, 164  
 Devaki, 100, 102  
 Devas, three classes:  
     Sammutidevā, 197  
     Upapattidevā, 197  
     Visuddhidevā, 197  
 Devasabhā, 73, 74  
 Devavatikas, 195  
 Devavidyā (etymology), 250  
 Devayajanavidyā, 250  
 Dhamma, 194, 238, 267  
 Dhammakanthikas, 286  
 Dhammanāṭaka, 167  
 Dhammasenāpatis, 212  
 Dhāmmāsoka, 138  
 Dhanabhūti, 168  
 Dhanakataṭaka, 78  
 Dhanañjaya Koravya, 99,  
     146  
 Dhanañjaya Setṭhi, 176  
 Dhanapālagāma, 42  
 Dhanurveda (military or  
     archery science), 249, 258  
 Dhanuskoṭi, 13  
 Dhatarattha, 118, 129, 200,  
     240  
 Dhruvamadhyamādik, 38  
 Digha-kārāyaṇa, 137, 169,  
     261  
 Dighanakha, 223  
 Disākākā (flight of crows),  
     187  
 Disākumāras (quarter-gods),  
     200  
 Disampati, 157  
 Discipline, 267  
 Dona, 23  
 Door-keepers (dovārikā),  
     178  
 Dowry, 176  
 Drama( pekkhā), 171  
 Drain cleaners (sandhikā),  
     178  
 Draupadi, 95  
 Drāviḍā, 113  
 Dream portents (supinam),  
     248  
 Dropastūpa, 57  
 Dr̄ṣadvati, 36  
 Dr̄stivāda, 267  
 Druggists, 151, 155  
 Drugs, 188  
 Druhyas, 86  
 Drupada, 168

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| Duels, 171                                     | Elephant trainers ( <i>hathhi-pälä</i> ), 178, 180 |
| Dukkarakārikā, a form of penance, 231          | Emblems, eight, 208                                |
| Dumamukha, king, 87, 97, 122, 215              | Embryology, 260                                    |
| Dussikā (cloth merchants), 178, 179            | Epidemics, 173                                     |
| Dūtas, 155                                     | Erakaccha, 109                                     |
| Duties, exemption from the payment of, 174     | Etiquette, laws of, 243                            |
| Duyyodhana, 121                                | Etymology, 250                                     |
| Dvārakā, 85, 102                               | Exchange, medium of, 190                           |
| Dvāravatī, 102, 132, 167, 215, 239             | Exegesis ( <i>niruttia</i> ), 246, 262             |
| Dvārikeśvari, 59                               | Exorcism, 252                                      |
| Dyers ( <i>rajakārā</i> ), 178, 179            | Famine, three kinds of:                            |
| Dynastic list of the kings in the Purāṇas, 138 | Cañou, 172   |
| Earthquakes, forecasts of, 248                 | Śalākāvṛtti, 172                                   |
| Eastern Turkistan, 88                          | Svetāsthi, 172                                     |
| Economic conditions, 139<br>et seq.            | Farmers, 152, 155, 160, 170                        |
| Edicts of Aśoka, 113                           | Farokhabad Dist., 37                               |
| Ekadandikas, 202                               | Fences, 181  |
| Ekanālā, 49, 159                               | Festive sowing ( <i>mangala vappa</i> ), 159       |
| Ekapadikamaga, 219                             | Fibre crops, 182                                   |
| Ekasālakatinduka, 46                           | Fick, Richard, 151, 164                            |
| Ekasāṭakas (one-garment men), 222              | Fighters, 178                                      |
| Ekāyana (Path of purity), 250                  | Fighting units, 178                                |
| Elephant, four kinds of, 65                    | Fine arts, 250                                     |
| Elephant riders ( <i>hathhā-rohā</i> ), 178    | Fishermen, 141                                     |
|  | Fodder-suppliers, 179                              |
|  | Foot-soldiers, 178                                 |
|  | Fortune-tellers, 151                               |
|  | Fowlers, 140                                       |
|  | Fuel-suppliers ( <i>kaṭṭhahārā</i> ), 178, 179     |
|  | Gaggarā tank, 50, 236                              |
|  | Gahapati, 174, 175, 177, 213                       |
|  | Gahapati-mahāsālas, 175                            |

- Gāmabhojaka (village head-man), 183  
 Gāmaghātāgorā (plunderers of villages), 172  
 Gāmekhetta (cultivable lands), 181  
 Game:  
     Akkharikā, 277  
 Gapadharas, 211  
 Gaṇarājās, 135  
 Gardak, 25, 54  
 Gaṇḍakī, 46  
 Gandhabbā (music), 248  
 Gandhabbaveda (science of music), 260  
 Gandhamādana, 9, 12, 62, 82  
 Gandhapura, 48  
 Gandhāra, 19, 67, 83, 86, 97, 109, 116, 120, 122, 185, 215, 280  
 Gandhāra-visaya, 72  
 Gandharvaveda (science of music), 249  
 Gandhikā (perfumers), 178  
 Gaṅgā, 6, 8, 10, 11, 12, 17, 73, 185  
 Ganges, 37, 100, 121, 122, 129, 135, 136, 214, 229  
 Gangetic Valley, 34  
 Gaṇikā (prostitutes), 168, 176, 192  
 Gaṇivijjā (Arithmetic), 274  
 Gayā, 22, 46, 220, 221  
 Gayā, river, 220  
 Gayākhetta, 119, 206, 220  
 Gayāsira, 26, 47, 48  
 Gayāsīsa, 26  
 Generals, 155  
 Geology, 260  
 Geyya, 269  
 Ghanaselapabbata, 75  
 Ghatapandita, 101  
 Ghogrā, 25  
 Ghosaka, 166  
 Ghositārāma, 39  
 Ghotamukha, 261  
 Gihivinaya (grhivinaya), 268  
 Gijjhakūṭa, 27, 28, 237  
 Ginger, dry, 182  
 Giribaja, 48, 120  
 Giriye, 29  
 Gitamārga, 262, 265  
 Godāvari, 77, 107, 108, 113, 218, 219, 283  
 Goghātakas (butchers), 151  
 Gomaṭa-Kandarā, 31  
 Gonaddha, 74  
 Gopa-nāpitam, 141  
 Gopas, 151  
 Goradhagiri, 27  
 Gorakhpur, 25  
 Gorathagiri, 27, 47  
 Gośāla, 224, 230, 233, 260  
 Gotama mountain, 63  
 Gotama-gotta, 146  
 Gotta, 146, 147, 222  
 Gotama, 146  
 Kapitthā, 146  
 Vāsetṭha, 125, 146  
 Yuddhitthila, 146  
 Govāḍḍhana, 100  
 Government, form of:  
     Monarchical, 163

- Oligarchical, 124, 163  
 Republican, 124, 163  
 Tribal, 163  
 Govinda, 123, 157  
 Graces, four Indian, 204  
 Grammar (*Vyākaraṇa*), 245,  
     247, 263, 264  
 Granaries, public, 171, 242  
 Grass-cutters, 179  
*Grdhrakūṭa*, *vide* *Gijjhakūṭa*.  
*Gṛhīvinaya*, 268  
 Guilds (pugas), 142, 179  
 Gwālior, 114
- Haddipas, 141  
 Haihayas, 104, 105  
 Haimavatapati, 12  
 Haimavatavarṣa, 80  
 Hāliddhikāni, 175  
 Halla, 135  
 Hamsā, 230  
 Harikāntā, 10  
 Harikāntānadiṣuri, 12  
 Harisena, 215  
 Harivarsa, 3, 9, 62  
 Hastināpura, 35, 94, 97, 133,  
     215  
 Haṭhayoga, 232, 255  
 Hatthārohā (elephant  
     riders), 178  
 Hatthipālā (elephant  
     trainers), 178  
 Hatthipura, 120  
 Hazaribagh, 48  
 Helmet-wearers, 178  
 Hemakūṭaparvata, 3, 9, 63  
 Hermits, 215, 216, 217
- Hierarchy, 199, 200, 201  
 Highway robbers (pantha-  
     ghātacorā), 172  
 Himācala, 5  
 Himalaya, 5, 8, 123  
 Himavanta, 5, 63  
 Hinajātis, five, 140  
 Hināsippas (low trades), 140  
 Hinugulapabbata, 6 ~  
 Hinugulatala, 6  
 Hirafīnavati, 25  
 Hiranyaśringa, 10  
 Homa, 206  
 Hopkins, 72, 202  
 Horse-sacrifice (aśvamedha),  
     205  
 Horses of diverse breeds,  
     65  
 Hotel keepers, 178  
 Household servants (pes-  
     sikā), 178  
 Human-sacrifice (purisa-  
     medha), 205  
 Hunters (uddakasamā),  
     140, 151  
 Hyderabad, 18  
 Hydraotes, 69, 92  
 Hyphasis, 92
- Icchānaṅgala, 45  
 Icchānaṅkala, 161  
 Ikshvāku, 122, 125  
 Ilāvṛtavarsa, 3, 62  
 Inda, 197, 201, 203  
 Indakūṭa, 29  
 Indapatta, 35, 93, 94, 99  
 Indasālaguhā, 29, 30

- Indian ocean, 187  
 Indraprastha, 35  
 Indus, 70  
 Infant healing, 259  
 Inscription—  
     Barabar Hill-cave, 27  
     Barhut, 57  
     Barhut gateway, 168  
     Behistun, of Darius, 87  
     Besnagar Garuda Pillar,  
         84  
     Brāhma, 80  
     Hāthigumphā, 27, 44,  
         106, 115  
     Junagadh Rock, 84, 112  
     Nāgārjunikonda, 79, 85  
 Ionia, 83, 187  
 Iravati, 69  
 Irubbeda, 247  
 Isadhera, 2  
 Isāna, 203  
 Isidasi, 272  
 Isigili Mt., 27, 237  
 Isipabbajā, 213, 217  
 Isipatana, 33, 42  
 Issathas (soldiers), 155  
 Isukara, 36  
 Itihāsa, 245, 246, 247, 248,  
     250, 256  
 Itihāsa-Purāna, 250, 253,  
     256, 283  
 Itivuttaka, 269  
 Ivory-workers, 179  
 Jacobi, H., 139, 274  
 Jalapathakamnikā, 183  
 Jambāvati, 102  
 Jambu river, 7, 9, 10, 32  
 Jambudvīpa, 1, 3, 7, 9, 13,  
     42, 68, 77, 80, 93, 102, 139,  
     181, 185, 195  
 Jambugāma, 53, 54  
 Jambusaṅga, 7  
 Jambuvana, 7  
 Janaka, 122  
 Janakapura, 53  
 Janamejaya, king, 87  
 Janñupatha, 71  
 Jāṇussoṇi, 161  
 Jarāsandha, 121  
 Jātaka—  
     Akitti, 114  
     Apannaka, 184  
     Assaka, 108 .  
     Bāveru, 185  
     Bhaddasala, 128, 130, 137  
     Cetiya, 120, 133  
     Citta-Sambhūta, 282  
     Cullakālinga, 108  
     Dasaratha, 132, 169  
     Devadhamma, 197  
     Dhumakāri, 95  
     Dummedha, 130  
     Ekaparṇa, 124  
     Gandhāra, 123  
     Ghata, 100, 101  
     Kalingabodhi, 116  
     Kumbhakara, 37, 97, 214  
     Kuṇāla, 5, 6  
     Kusa, 125  
     Mahāsutasoma, 160  
     Mahāummagga, 102  
     Mudupāni, 165  
     Mugapakkha, 214

- Nāndiyamiga, 132  
 Phandana, 160  
 Sambhava, 95  
 Sambula, 130  
 Samuddavāñja, 186  
 Sañkha, 185  
 Sarabhaṅga, 106, 159, 219  
 Serivāñja, 114  
 Silānisamsa, 186  
 Siri-kālakapni, 204  
 Somadatta, 160  
 Somanassa, 35, 37, 97  
 Suppāraka, 185, 188  
 Susima, 157  
 Valābhassa, 186  
 Vidhurapāṇḍita, 95, 98,  
     99, 119  
 Vessantara, 257  
 Jāti, 143, 148  
 Jatilas, 198, 214, 220, 222  
 Java, 187, 188  
 Jayaddisa, prince, 98  
 Jeta, prince, 176, 235  
 Jetavana, 235  
 Jetuttara, 41, 91  
 Jhāna, modes of, 218, 231,  
     233, 255  
 Jhelum, 70  
 Jīvaka, 49, 237, 280, 281,  
     282  
 Jīvakambavana, 49, 236  
 Jñātri clan, 225  
 Jñātrikas, 124  
 Jotipāla, 157, 159, 280  
 Judges, 155, 171  
 Kaccāyana, 100  
 Kacchas, 111  
 Kadamba mountain, 83  
 Kahāpaṇas, *vide* coins.  
 Kajangala, 20, 24, 32, 34, 50,  
     51, 59, 61, 135  
 Kekandi, 219  
 Kokutthā, 24, 54  
 Kalābu, king, 239  
 Kālakavana, 20  
 Kālāmas, 34, 57, 128, 134  
 Kālamukha, 187, 188  
 Kalandaka-nivāpa, 237  
 Kālārajanaka, 122  
 Kalasa, 209  
 Kālasena, 100, 131  
 Kālasilī, 29, 237  
 Kālidūsa, 272  
 Kālinga, country, 19, 34, 59,  
     78, 89, 106, 116, 118, 119,  
     134, 215, 239  
 Kālinga, people, 113  
 Kālingas, 115  
 Kalpa, 250  
 Kāmarūpa, 62  
 Kāmasūtras, 246  
 Kāmāvacarādevas, 199  
 Kambojas, 72, 83, 84, 85,  
     140, 141  
 Kammārā (metal-workers),  
     178  
 Kammāsadamma, 36  
 Kampilla, 37, 97  
 Kampillapura, 43  
 Kāmpilya, 97, 215  
 Kamsa, 100, 101, 102,  
     164

- Kāṁsabhoga, 67, 100, 102  
 Kanaka-saptati, 246  
 Kāñcīpura, 78  
 Kandarā:  
     Gomata, 31  
     Kapota, 31  
     Tapoda, 31  
     Tinduka, 31  
 Kanhadipāyaṇa, 102, 239  
 Kāñhagangā, 11  
 Kāṇḍamnndā lake, 5  
 Kāṇḍapeppā river, 77  
 Kapila, sage, 127  
 Kapila's formulation, 246  
 Kapilavatthu, 24, 32, 45,  
     54, 56, 73, 127, 137, 219,  
     236  
 Karakāṇḍu, king, 87, 116,  
     215  
 Karaṇḍu, king, 87, 116  
 Karavika, 2  
 Karmāra-kumbhakāra, 141  
 Kārūṣas, 110  
 Kāśī, 19, 21, 22, 24, 33, 41,  
     89, 108, 123, 125, 129,  
     130, 131, 132, 133, 135,  
     136, 137, 159, 168, 172,  
     216  
 Kāśmira, 67, 185  
 Kassakā (agriculturists),  
     151  
 Kassapa, 147, 220, 252  
 Kathiawar, 111, 112  
 Kāṭhahārā (fuel suppliers),  
     178  
 Kauśambi, 37, 94, 118, 133  
 Kauśikī, 122  
 Kauṭilya, 246, 257  
 Kavandhin Kātyāyana, 225  
 Kāverī river, 77, 114, 115  
 Kāvīrapaṭṭana, 114  
 Keay, F. E., 250  
 Keith, A. B., 118, 233  
 Kckaka country, 115  
 Kekayas, 89, 239  
 Kelāsa, 10  
 Keralaputras, 113, 115  
 Kerala, 115  
 Kern, H., 81, 224  
 Kesaputta, 34, 57, 128, 134  
 Ketumāla, 9  
 Khalamandala, 182  
 Khalatikapavata, 27, 47  
 Khānumāla, 9, 161  
 Khāravela, 44, 106, 115,  
     116, 119, 134, 216  
 Khattavijjā, 258  
 Khattiyas, 139, 147, 154,  
     163, 164, 173, 174, 178,  
     180, 213  
 Khomadussa, 55  
 Kimpurisas, 81, 82, 200  
 Kimpuruṣavaṇa, 63  
 Kipparas, 81, 200  
 Kirāta, 72, 80, 84, 86, 271  
 Kisa Saṅkicca, 226  
 Kisavaccha, 217, 239  
 Kitāgiri, 42  
 Kokanada, 223  
 Kolakā, people, 113  
 Koliyas, 34, 55, 126, 127,  
     128, 134, 168

- Kośala, 19, 21, 22, 33, 43, 44, 45, 46, 74, 89, 100, 120, 123, 127, 129, 130, 131, 132, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 173, 218, 280, 281, 282  
 Kośambi, 21, 75, 99, 133, 184, 185  
 Kosiki, 52  
 Krivis, 98  
 Kṛṣṇā, river, 113, 114  
 Kṛṣṇapura, 103  
 Kṣatriya Parivrājakas, 230  
 Kṣudrahimavadgiri, 13  
 Kukkuṭa mountain, 63  
 Kumāra Kassapa, 286  
 Kunārī, 15  
 Kumbhakāra (potters), 141, 178, 179  
 Kumbhakāragāma, 180  
 Kumbhavati, city, 106  
 Kunāla lake, 5  
 Kuṇḍagāma, 52  
 Kuṇḍaliya, 223  
 Kūṇika, 123, 124  
 Kuraraghara, 75  
 Kuru, 2, 19, 33, 35, 83, 89, 93, 96, 97, 98, 99, 133, 136, 146, 150, 163, 215  
 Kurujāngala, 31, 35  
 Kurukṣetra, 21, 35  
 Kururāṭṭha, 34, 120  
 Kuśāvati, 43, 54, 126  
 Kuśinārā, 26, 53, 126, 134.  
 Kūṭḍanta, 161  
 Kuvera, 63, 200
- Lādha, 19, 59, 117, 240  
 Lakes, several Himalayan, 5  
 Lakkhaṇa-pāṭṭhakas, 210  
 Land-pilot (thalaniyāmakā), 184  
 Latthivana, 48  
 Lauhitya, 64  
 Laukika, 265  
 Law, B. C., 7, 15, 16, 23, 28, 29, 31, 32, 43, 44, 45, 46, 48, 40, etc.  
 Leather-workers (commakārā), 178, 179  
 Lenas (cave-dwellings), 235  
 Letters of Credit, 190  
 Levi, S., 71, 188  
 Licchavi clan, 211  
 Licchavis, 123, 124, 125, 126, 134, 136, 163  
 Loans, 191  
 Lohitavastu, 48  
 Lokapālas, 200  
 Lumbinīvana, 32, 55
- Māocha, 19, 98, 209  
 Māochikāsanḍa, 42  
 Madda country, 89, 116  
 Maddakucchi Deer Park, 33, 237  
 Maddas, 88, 89, 99  
 Madhurā, 23, 95, 99, 100, 101, 102, 115, 164, 184  
 Madhurasuttapāṭṭana, 78  
 Madhyadeśa, 19, 21  
 Madra, 67, 83, 88, 89

- Magadha, 19, 20, 24, 34, 46, 49, 50, 87, 111, 119, 120, 121, 123, 125, 128, 134, 135, 136, 138, 161, 163, 165, 206, 220, 241, 282  
 Māgahatitthakhetta, 46  
 Māgandiya, 223  
 Maghādeva, 122, 215  
 Mahādeva, 215  
 Mahāgaṅgā, 23  
 Mahāgovinda, 34, 157, 158, 217, 218, 256  
 Mahā-Himavanta, 4, 6  
 Mahājanapadas, sixteen, 98, 109, 117  
 Mahākālinga, 116  
 Mahāmali Gaṅgā, 23  
 Mahāmāttas, 155, 158  
 Mahāmeru, 2  
 Mahāmoggallāna, 288  
 Mahānadi, 18, 24, 47  
 Mahāpadmahrada, 10, 64  
 Mahāpasenadi, 120, 132  
 Mahārāṣṭra, 18  
 Mahāśāgara, 160  
 Mahāsammata, 127, 133  
 Mahāśārā, 57  
 Mahāsthāngarh, 60  
 Mahāsudassana, king, 126  
 Mahāvana, 31, 53, 54, 126, 236  
 Mahāvīra, 49, 104, 105, 118, 120, 121, 123, 124, 209, 211, 222, 224, 233, 236, 240, 266  
 Mahendragiri, 47  
 Mahī, 6, 11, 23  
 Mahimsakā, people, 113  
 Mahimsakarattha, 90, 115  
 Māhiṣmati, 17, 34, 77, 104  
 Māhissati, 34, 74, 75, 104  
 Maholi, 99  
 Maināka, 10  
 Majjhimadesa, 18, 34, 224  
 Majumdar, R. C., 188  
 Mākandi, 219  
 Makhādeva, 122, 215  
 Makkhali Gosāla, 224, 226, 274  
 Malalasekera, G. P., 45, 50, 58, 75, 77, etc.  
 Malay Peninsula, 188  
 Malaya, 19  
 Mallaki clan, 211  
 Mallas, 117, 125, 126, 134, 137, 148, 163  
 Mallikā, 46  
 Mānas-sarovara, 12, 63  
 Mandākini lake, 5  
 Maṇipikārā (jewellers), 178  
 Manimukhalā, 205  
 Manoja, 130  
 Manussa-vikkaya (traffic in human beings), 191  
 Mariyādā, 152  
 Marukaccha, 74  
 Mātaṅga, hill, 28  
 Mātaṅga, sage, 239  
 Matchmakers, 150, 152, 155  
 Mātharavṛtti, 246  
 Māthava, king, 121, 122, 215  
 Mathurā, 67, 75, 84, 99, 102

- Matsya, 21, 98, 99, 209  
 Mauryas, 101, 112  
 Mediterranean, 187  
 Megasthenes, 101  
 Mekalas, 79, 109, 110  
 Menander, 88  
 Mendaka, 175  
 Meru, 2, 8  
 Message-senders (pehāna-kacorā), 172  
 Metal-workers (kamīmārā), 178  
 Majhorā, 103  
 Migadāya, 23  
 Migāra, bankor, 176, 235  
 Migasainmatā, 25  
 Milakkhabhāsā, 86, 110, 113, 249, 271  
 Milinda, 83, 88  
 Mithi, 122  
 Mithilā, 34, 49, 50, 53, 122, 123, 216  
 Mlechhas, 139  
 Moggaliputta, 168  
 Moggallāna, 212, 234, 239  
 Molinī, 41  
 Moliyāsivaka, 223  
 Money-lenders, 191  
 Mookerjee, R. K., 186, 210  
 Mophsis, 88  
 Moriyas, 34, 128, 134, 138  
 Mote-hall, 124, 125, 127  
 Mrigadāva, 33, 42  
 Mr̄tapas, 141  
 Muddā (conveyancing), 249  
 Mukheluvapa, 51  
 Mūlaka, 78, 108  
 Mundakas (shavelings), 222  
 Muttra, 99  
 Muzaffarpur Dist., 52  
 Mysore, 18, 77  
 Naech (dancing), 261  
 Nāgas, 105  
 Nāgasena, 277  
 Nāgavana, 32  
 Naggaji, king, 87, 116, 122, 215  
 Nakṣatravidyā, 250  
 Nakulapitā, 175  
 Nalakārā (basket-makers), 178  
 Nālandā, 45, 236  
 Nalinī, river, 10  
 Nandagopā, 101  
 Nanda Vaccha, 226  
 Nandiya, 223  
 Nandiyāvatta, 209  
 Nangaraka, 55  
 Narmadā, 17, 18, 74, 77, 105  
 Nasik, 18, 78  
 Natthikavādā, 110  
 Nawal, 32  
 Nemindhara, 2  
 Nepal, 56  
 Noranjarā, 22, 24, 47, 236  
 Nesālas, 140, 179  
 Newal, 32  
 Nicakṣu, 133  
 Nigantha Nāṭeputta, 224, 225  
 Niganthas, 198

- Niggāhaka (tax-collectors), 150  
 Nigrodha, 54  
 Nimi, king, 122, 215, 216  
 Nirukta, 262, 263  
 Nisādas, 151  
 Niśadha Mt., 3, 9  
 Niyyānaka (water-pilot), 187  
 Nrtyamārga, 262, 265  
 Oddakas, 110, 271  
 Okkāka, 125, 126, 131, 189  
 Okkalas, 79, 109, 110, 271  
 Omphis, 88  
 Opasāda, 161  
 Orissa, 79, 110  
 Oxydrakai, 69  
 Pabhosā, 39  
 Pācīnavānya, 41  
 Padapāṭha, 247  
 Pāḍha, 19  
 Paduma mountain, 63  
 Pallava, 68  
 Paiṭhan, 77  
 Pajjota, 105, 138  
 Pajjuna, 101  
 Pakudha Kaccāyana, 224, 225, 274  
 Pālaka, 105  
 Palāsapura, 236  
 Pālura, 79  
 Pañcāla, 19, 21, 23, 33, 36, 96, 97, 98, 120, 122, 135, 163, 215  
 Pañcavati, 78, 219  
 Pāṇḍara, 28  
 Pāṇḍava (hill), 27  
 Pāṇḍu, 168  
 Pāṇḍyas, 113, 115  
 Pāṇini, 198, 264, 268, 275  
 Panjab, 120  
 Paṅkadhā, 45  
 Panihaghātacorā (highway robbers), 172, 173  
 Paramavona, 70, 187  
 Pāraḍa, 87  
 Parantapa, 120, 133  
 Pargiter, F. E., 104, 105  
 Parahs, 141  
 Paribbājakas, 198, 201, 221, 224, 226, 227, 230, 231, 234, 235, 236, 238, 254, 255, 268  
 Pārileyyaka, 39  
 Pārileyyakavana, 31  
 Pārindas, 113, 114  
 Pāripāṭra, 20, 23  
 Pārittas, 207, 208  
 Pārśva, 130, 266  
 Pasenadi, 120, 127, 131, 132, 136, 137, 138, 157, 161, 173, 207, 218, 219, 280  
 Pāṭaligāma, 49, 136, 159  
 Pāṭaliputta, 24, 33, 49, 57, 60, 75, 159  
 Paṭilbhānakūṭa, 29  
 Patitṭhāna, 75, 77, 184  
 Patna, 46  
 Paudanya, 107  
 Pāvā, 54, 126, 134  
 Pāvāpuri, 49

- Pāvārikambavana, 49, 236  
 Payāga, 23, 24  
 Pehoa, 66  
 Periplus, 76  
 Pesakārā (*woavers*), 178  
 Pesanakacorā (messengers), 173  
 Pettanikas, 173  
 Phalgu, 48  
 Phalikapabbata, 6  
 Pilotika, 223  
 Piṅgala, 112, 138  
 Pippaliṇava, 32, 34, 56, 128, 134  
 Piprāvā, 56  
 Pitinikas, 106  
 Piyadasī, 238  
 Pliny, 114  
 Pokkharaśāti, 161  
 Pokkharaśāvatī, 109, 110  
 Potali, 78, 107  
 Potaliputta, 223  
 Potaliya, 175, 223  
 Potana, 34, 78, 107  
 Potters (kumbhakārā), 141, 178, 179  
 Potthapāda, 222  
 Pradyumna, 101  
 Prāgbodhi (hills), 26  
 Prayāga, 17, 21  
 Prosody (chandasā), 248, 249, 263  
 Prostitutes, 176, 192  
 Pr̥thudaka, 66  
 Ptolemy, 76, 112, 114, 188  
 Pubbarama, 46, 235  
 Pubbasela, 114  
 Pubbavideha, 2, 9  
 Pukkusa, 140  
 Pukkusāti, king, 87, 120  
 Pulika, 105, 120  
 Pulindas, 113  
 Pundakakṣa-hill, 51, 60  
 Puṇḍavardhana, 21, 51, 60  
 Paṇṇabhadda, 198  
 Paṇṇaka, the Yakkha, 99  
 Pupphavatī, 41  
 Pūraṇa Kassapa, 224, 274  
 Purisamedha (human-sacrifice), 205  
 Purohitas, 151, 155, 156, 157, 158, 162, 180, 201, 206, 217  
 Puru, 133  
 Puruṣapura, 68  
 Puṣkalāvati, 72, 87  
 Rādha country, 117  
 Rājagaha, 27, 33, 44, 49, 75, 78, 119, 121, 173, 176, 184, 232, 236, 237, 255, 280, 281  
 Rājagrha, 215  
 Rajayoga, 232, 255  
 Rajgir, 29  
 Rajputana, 68, 184  
 Rakkitatala, 7  
 Rāma, 217, 219  
 Rāmāgama, 34  
 Rāmasetu, 13  
 Rāmcévaram, 13  
 Rāpti, 23  
 Rathakāra lako, 5  
 Ratnagiri, 28

- Ravi, 69  
 Ray Chaudhuri, H. C., 83,  
 • 85, 94  
 Reṇu, 103, 115, 118, 129,  
 157, 217  
 Ḥṝvēda, 169, 245, 250  
 Rhys Davids, C. A. F., 55, 58  
 190, 262  
 Rhys Davids, T. W., 55,  
 134, 140, 186, 187, 200,  
 204, 221  
 Rockhill, W. W., 262, 265  
 Rohanas, 93  
 Rohini, river, 24, 55, 127  
 Rohitā, 10, 64  
 Rohwaini, 25  
 Roruka, 34, 70  
 Rowai, 24  
 Rudradāman I, 112  
 Rudrāyaṇa, king, 111, 120,  
 215  
 Rummindoi, 55  
 Rūpnārāyan, 59  
 Sabarā, people, 114  
 Sabhiya, 223  
 Sacrificers (yājakā), 151, 155  
 Sādānīrā, 46, 52, 123  
 Saddhivihārika, 288  
 Sāgala, 69, 88, 116  
 Sāgara, 100, 164  
 Sāgarikā, 166  
 Sahajāti, 39, 41, 185  
 Sahasranīka, 41  
 Salassambavana, 236  
 Sailagiri, 28  
 Sākala, 69, 88  
 Sāketa, 21, 31, 44, 45, 132  
 176, 184  
 Sakuladāyi, 223  
 Śākyas, 24, 55, 125, 127,  
 128, 131, 134, 137, 146,  
 163, 168, 169  
 Salalavati, 21, 25, 26, 32,  
 51, 59  
 Sālavana, 32  
 Sālāvatī, 161  
 Sāli, 182  
 Śalyatanaṭra, 259  
 Samajjās, 171  
 Samāṇas, 224, 226, 227, 234,  
 235, 238, 242, 253  
 Samatata, 61  
 Sāmāvatī, 166  
 Sambalpur, 18  
 Sambutīvara, 19  
 Saṃkassa, 39  
 Saṃkissa, 39, 90  
 Sammuti (Smṛti), 218  
 Sandaka, 223  
 Sañjaya Belaṭṭhiputta, 224,  
 225, 274  
 Saṅkara, 250  
 Saṅkhyā (Sāṃkhya), 248  
 Sāṇupabbata, 6  
 Sappasonḍikapabbhāra, 48  
 Sappinī, 25, 26  
 Sarabha, 223  
 Sarabhaṅga, sage, 216, 217,  
 220, 256  
 Sarabhū, 6, 11, 22, 23, 43, 46  
 Sarajī, 23  
 Sarasvatī, river, 10, 17, 20,  
 22, 34, 36

- Sārathipura, 48  
 Saravana, 46, 235  
 Sarāvatī, 21, 26, 59  
 Sarayū, 23, 25, 43, 219  
 Sāriputta, 168, 212  
 Sārnāth, 43  
 Śaśitāntra, 245, 246  
 Satānika, 118  
 Satiyaputras, 113  
 Sātodiķ river, 76  
 Sattapāṇṇi, 31  
 Sattapāṇṇiguhā, 237  
 Satthavāhā (caravan merchants), 70, 184, 185  
 Sātvatas, 103, 106  
 Saulimās, 117  
 Saurasenī dialect, 101  
 Saupāraṭakas, 172  
 Sauvīra, 67, 70, 111, 120, 215  
 Śavaras, 113, 114  
 Savaris, 114  
 Sāvatthī, 21, 23, 26, 31, 39, 40, 43, 44, 45, 46, 111, 112, 124, 132, 161, 173, 176, 184, 185, 219, 233, 235  
 Sekhiya rules (laws of etiquette), 243  
 Selectors of lucky sites, 152  
 Senānigāma, 47  
 Senāpatis, 155, 171, 180  
 Senis, 179  
 Serivaratiha, 79  
 Seriyāputta, 57  
 Setavyā, 32, 45, 55  
 Seyaviyā, 72; 91
- Sialkot, 69  
 Sihappapāṭaka, lake, 5  
 Sihapura, 120  
 Silavatī, 55  
 Sindhu, 6, 8, 10, 12, 64, 67, 70, 98  
 Sindhu-Soviras, 111  
 Sineru Mt., 1, 2, 3  
 Siri (Goddess of Luck), 204  
 Sirivacoa, 208  
 Śisupāla, 121  
 Sītā, river, 10  
 Sitavama, 237  
 Sivi, 91, 102, 167  
 Slave, 178, 192  
 Smith, V. A., 134  
 Sodrai, 69  
 Sohamma, 199  
 Sonā, river, 24  
 Sonadanda, 161  
 Sonagiri, 28, 29  
 Sonpabhūmi, 178  
 Sopārā, 112  
 Soreyya, 39  
 Sotthivatī, 40  
 Sotthiya class of Brahmins, 147, 155, 201, 247  
 Sovira, 34, 185  
 Srāvasti, 23, 43, 215, 235  
 Stevenson, 211  
 Suari, 114  
 Subbhābhūmi, 59, 117  
 Subhā Jivakambanikā, 272  
 Subhacaityaka, 28  
 Sūcīmukhi, 223  
 Sudarśana, 9

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| Suddas, 139, 141, 145,<br>148, 154, 178, 180, 213,<br>242       | Tārukkha, 181                           |
| Suhma, 51, 60, 117  | Telavāha river, 79, 114.                |
| Sujāta, prince, 108   | Telingana, 18                           |
| Śuktimati, 40   | Telingiri, 174                          |
| Sumbhas, 51, 117  | Thalapathakammikā, 183                  |
| Sumedhā, 272  | Thaneswar, 17, 67                       |
| Sumeru Mt., 1, 2, 3, 8, 62,<br>• 201                            | Thomas, E. J., 180, 176,<br>234         |
| Sumsumāragira, 32, 39, 40,<br>410, 134                          | Thūpa, 21, 66                           |
| Sunāparanī, 76, 112   | Tinduka-kandarā, 31                     |
| Śungas, 138   | Tirhut, 52                              |
| Suppārakas, 111, 112  | Tittiriyas, 201, 253                    |
| Sūrasenas, 67, 74, 98, 99,<br>101, 103                          | Tiyaggala, rock, 11                     |
| Suraṭṭha, 112, 138  | Tiyaggalapokkharaṇī, 11                 |
| Surpāraka, 74, 76   | Todeyya, 161                            |
| Suti (Śruti), 248, 249  | Torapavatthu, 45                        |
| Suvaṇṇabhūmi, 178, 185,<br>186, 187, 188                        | Travancore, 18                          |
| Suvaṇṇatala, 6  | Triśalā, 123                            |
| Suvarṇarekha, 26, 32, 59  | Tundikeras, 104                         |
| Svetapura, 60   | Tūrghna, 35                             |
| Swat valley, 107  |   |
| Takkasilā, 43, 87, 88, 184,<br>278, 280, 281, 282               | Udayagiri, 28                           |
| Tāmalitti, 33, 60, 185  | Udayana, 133, 138                       |
| Tambapaṇṇidipa, 186   | Uddakarāmaputta, 232, 284               |
| Tāmralinga, 188   | Udena, 110, 120, 133                    |
| Tāmralipti, 117   | Udumbara, 39                            |
| Tāpasas, 201, 213, 215,<br>219, 222, 226, 229, 230,<br>231, 255 | Uggaputtas, 174                         |
| Tapodārāma, 237   | Ujjayini, 104, 185                      |
|   | Ujjenī, 75, 104                         |
|   | Ukkācelā, 53                            |
|   | Ukkala, 109, 110                        |
|   | Ukkalāvassabhañīś, 110                  |
|   | Ukkatṭha, 45, 161                       |
|   | Ulūmpa, 45                              |
|   | Upāli, 242, 280                         |
|   | Urnavelā, 42, 47, 48, 49, 220,<br>• 232 |

- Uśinara, 38  
 Ūśiradvaja Mt., 21  
 Utikala, 79, 109, 110  
 Uttarakuru, 2, 9, 35, 81,  
     89  
 Uttara-madhura, 99, 100,  
     102, 113  
 Uttara-madras, 88  
 Uttarapaficāla, 31, 35, 36,  
     37, 43, 97, 120  
 Utterāpatha, 18, 19, 66,  
     67, 71, 73, 90, 100, 107,  
     109, 110, 140, 184  
     "  
 Vacchagoitta, 223  
 Vāhlika, 67  
 Vāhudā, river, 22  
 Vaibhāragiri, 28, 30  
 Vajtādhyā, 4, 8, 12, 13, 77,  
     107  
 Vajji, 19, 32, 33, 52, 126  
 Vālmīki, 257  
 Vamsa, 19, 23, 33, 37, 120,  
     134, 138, 166  
 Vanacarakā (explorers of  
     forest regions), 219, 220  
 Vānamantradēvas, 200  
 Vanigas, 117, 118  
 Vardhamāna, 209  
 Varendra, 21  
 Varsadhwara Mt., 4  
 Vasāla, 48  
 Vāsavadattā, 105  
 Vāsudeva, 100, 101, 102,  
     103, 132, 146, 167, 198  
 Vatsa, 22, 23, 33, 37, 39,  
     40, 41, 138°
- Vedehī, 123  
 Vedisa, 75, 84, 109  
 Vedisagiri, 75  
 Vedyaka hill, 26, 30  
 Vchalla, 135  
 Vekhanassa, 223  
 Velugāma, 75  
 Veluvana, 236, 237  
 Venāgapura, 45  
 Vopulla Mt., 27, 29, 30, 119  
 Veranīja, 39, 75  
 Verāpatha, 187  
 Vesālī, 24, 31, 40, 47, 49,  
     52, 54, 111, 124, 134,  
     136, 137, 225  
 Vessas, 139, 145, 148, 150,  
     154, 174, 175, 176, 177,  
     178, 180  
 Vethadipa, 34, 57  
 Vetravati, 109  
 Vettavati, 6, 25, 26, 74  
 Vidarbha, 215  
 Videgha Māthava, 121  
 Videha, 2, 24, 34, 46, 52, 98,  
     121, 122, 123, 157, 185,  
     186, 215, 216, 217  
 Vidisā, 26  
 Vidūḍabha, 127, 137, 169  
 Vijālhārādhivāsā, 44  
 Vijaya, 215  
 Vikaṭa Mt., 63  
 Vinasana, 17, 20, 21, 23  
 Vinatāka, 2  
 Vinaya, 267  
 Vindhya, 4, 16, 33, 34, 44,  
     100, 107, 108, 214, 217,  
     218

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| Vipula, 28, 30                                | Wrestlers, 178  |
| Virūḍhaka (Virūḍhaka), 132,                   |   |
| • 200   | Yādavas, 95, 103  |
| Visākhā, 40, 235                              | Yājñikas, 151   |
| Vitamsā, 6, 73                                | Yājpur, 47  |
| Vrātyas, 118                                  | Yamunā, 6, 11, 17, 22, 23,<br>24, 26, 38, 40, 41, 99, 109,<br>133, 185, 214 |
| Vṛśabha Mt., 28                               | Yaśodharā, 204  |
| Water-pilot ( <i>niyyāmaka</i> ),<br>• 187    | Yavana Tuṣāspa, 112   |
| Weavers ( <i>pesakārā</i> ), 141,<br>178, 179 | Yonas, 82, 83, 84, 140,<br>141  |
| Wood-carvers, 141                             | Zimmer, 190   |
| Wreath makers, 179                            |   |



